The Lovelace–Loveless and Allied Families

Gc
929.2
L941r
1146154

GENEALOGY COLLECTION

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY
3 1833 00853 0732

Florance Loveless Keeney Robertson

THE LOVELACE — LOVELESS AND ALLIED FAMILIES

By Florance Loveless Keeney Robertson, M.A.
2447 South Orange Drive
Los Angeles, California

This is Number _____
of a Limited Edition

Copyright 1952
by
Florance Loveless Keeney Robertson, M.A.

Printed and Bound in the United States
by
Murray & Gee, Inc., Culver City, Calif.

1146154

TABLE OF CONTENTS

List of Illustrations v

PREFACE vii

The Loveless-Lovelace Family Coat of Arms x

PART I—English Ancestry of the Family

Chapter I—Earliest Records 1

Chapter II—The Hurley Branch 13

Chapter III—The Hever, Kingsdown and Bayford Lines . 23

Chapter IV—The Bethersden Line 37

Chapter IV—The Ancestors of All American Lovelace-Loveless Families 43

PART II—American Families

Chapter I—Some Children of Sir William and Anne Barne Lovelace 51

Chapter II—Gov. Francis Lovelace of New York State and Some of his Descendants 54

Chapter III—Loveless of Kentucky and Utah 59

Chapter IV—Jeremiah, Joseph and George Loveless of New York State 93

Chapter V—Lovelace and Loveless Families of Ohio, Vermont and Pennsylvania 108

Chapter VI—John Baptist Lovelace of Maryland . . . 119

PART III—Miscellaneous Records

Chapter I—English 133

Chapter II—American 140

$20.00
Bookkeeper

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

Lovelace-Goldwell Coat of Arms 3

Lovelace-Eynsham Coat of Arms 9

The Honorable Nevil Lovelace Shield 19

Lovelace-Peckham Coat of Arms 23

Lovelace-Harmon Coat of Arms 25

Lovelace-Clement Coat of Arms 27

Lovelace-Eynsham-Lewknor Coat of Arms 30

Florance Loveless Keeney and John Edwin Robertson . . . 101

Mary Mores (Goss) Loveless and Solomon Loveless . . . 103

Cora Loveless 104

Memorial Window to Solomon and Mary Loveless 105

PREFACE

The extensive research for the data shown in this genealogy was begun in 1916 in Washington, D. C. when the compiler was living there and had access to the exceptionally good collections of historical data in the Congressional and D.A.R. Libraries, Census and Pension Bureaus, etc. Our work dealt primarily with two distinct families, i.e. Loveless and Keeney, but included many allied families and early European and royal ancestries of many colonial pioneers with some carried back to Adam.

To date our printed material includes, OUR FAMILY NAME, (a pamphlet on Keeney name as it appears in the records under more than 36 different spellings) — Vol. I of The KEAYNE-KEEN(E)-KEENEY-KINNEY-KENNEY and allied families. (A book 185 pp.-1942 c.) HENRY and ANN KINNE, Pioneers of Salem, Mass. (218 pp. 1947c.) Vol. II of the above, in press. Also JORAN KYN of NEW SWEDEN in Vol. CV Jan. 1951, *New England Historical & Genealogical Register*. We have also carefully arranged manuscript sufficient for two or more additional books.

Genealogy touches life in its most vital and important relations, — it reveals the origin of a person and the effect of environment and heredity upon his status and estate in society; the connections of a man by marriage, his parentage or ancestry, and the effect thereon upon his life.

Thus we find many are developing a proper pride in their ancestry. "In fact, a lively desire of knowing and recording our ancestors so generally prevails, that it must depend on the influence of some common principle in the minds of men. We seem to have lived in the persons of our forefathers; it is the labour and reward of vanity to extend

the term of this ideal longevity. The satirist may laugh, the philosopher may preach; but Reason herself will respect the prejudices and habits which have been consecrated by the experience of mankind. Few there are who can seriously despise in others an advantage of which they are secretly ambitious to partake. The knowledge of our own family from a remote period will always be esteemed as an abstract pre-eminence, since it can never be promiscuously enjoyed. If we read of some illustrious line, so ancient that it has no beginning, so worthy that it ought to have no end, we sympathize in its various fortunes: nor can we blame the generous enthusiasm, or the harmless vanity, of those who are allied to the honours of its name —" *Edward Gibbon* (1727-1794) English Historian, in his *Autobiography*.

In early records the Lovelace name appears under many different spellings including Loulas; Luvlace; Loveles; Lovelisse; Lawless; Laghless; Loueless; Loweless; Lovelas; Louelace; Lovelass; Lovis.

"Surnames are known to have been assumed, in some instances, before the Norman Conquest; but they did not become general in England until two or three centuries later. Every name originally had a meaning and was at first assumed or imposed from its real or supposed fitness, from some accidental circumstance, or from mere caprice. Each individual is distinguished from his fellows only by his name. But for this system, history and biography could hardly exist." *Suffolk Surnames* — Bowditch, Nathaniel Ingersole, Ticknor & Fields, Boston, 1858.

"A name! If the party had a voice
What mortal would be a Bugg by choice?" — *Hood.*

"Tradition says that the name originated from Loheac, who was a captain of a free company in the service of Edward the Black Prince, and subsequently settled in England." Geo. S. Lovelace, Atty., Union National Bank Bldg., Muskegon, Michigan, 1926.

"The Episcopal registers of the 13th century show us

that the clergy were known by the villages and manors from whence they came. Almost invariably they bore place names. And many of these names became corrupted when the original place name ceased to be generally understood and was assimulated to some name more or less phonetically equivalent, as Lovelass for Lovelace." P. 322 — *Family Names and Their History*, Baring-Gould, 1910.

The pension papers of Joseph Loveless, Rev. sold. from N.Y. State and now in the U.S. Pension Office, show that the family name of all in America should be Lovelace. But in pre-revolutionary times the family was divided by political interests and the Tories or Royalists kept the name and either returned to Europe or removed to Canada, while the patriots or rebels changed the name to Loveless and disclaimed all relationship to the Lovelace family. F. K. Robertson — 1916.

Lovelace (Loveless) is an old English surname, derived from the wearing of a love token. The spelling was originally Loveles in Medieval times, but both spellings soon became common, although the name had one origin. *World Publishing Co.*, Wash., D.C.

EARLY RECORDS OF THE NAME IN ENGLAND:

Albeucis Loveles — Co. Suffolk A. p. 1273.

Sana Loveles — Co. Hunts A.D. 1273.

Robert Lovelisse — Co. Berkes — Regent of the University of Oxford in 1587.

Sarah Loveless — m. — Thos. Gunaway—London 1734.

Joseph Lovelace — m. — Elizabeth Owen 1754.

Edward Lovelace of Wormley — m. — Mary Marsh (spinster) London May 17, 1671.

REVOLUTIONARY WAR:

David Lovelace; Private Benj. Loveless; David Loveless (Age 18 yr. according to the description when enrolled); Joshua Loveless; Wm. Loveless; Wm. Loveless (Seaman); Jeremiah Loveless; Wm. Loveless; Wm. Loveless (taken prisoner).

THE LOVELACE-LOVELESS FAMILY COAT OF ARMS:

"Coat of Arms of the Lovelace Family"

Arms — Gules on a Chief indented Argent — 3 Martlets Sable.

Crest — On a Staff Raguly Vert an Eagle displayed Argent.

"Coat of Arms for the Loveless Family"

Arms — On 3 Laurel Leaves Vert.

Crest — A Demi-Talbot Proper.

EXPLANATION AND DESCRIPTION OF THE ABOVE SYMBOLS:

Gules or red denotes Military Fortitude and Magnanimity. "The Martyr's Color."

Chief — which occupies the whole top and 1/3 of the total surface of the shield of arms, signifies dominion and authority, and it has often been granted as a special reward for prudence and wisdom as well as for successful command in war.

Argent — white or silver, signifies peace and sincerity.

Martlet is a bird — shaped like a swallow with a forked tail and 2 tufts instead of legs.

Sable, or black, denotes constancy and sometimes, but rarely, grief.

Raguly or raguled, is when the bearing or uneven or ragged, like the trunk or limb of a tree left of its branches.

Vert, or green signifies hope, joy and sometimes loyalty in love.

Eagle — which is usually represented with wings "displayed" signifies a "man of action evermore occupied in high and weighty affairs and one of lofty spirit, ingenious, speedy in apprehension and judicious in matters of ambiguity." The displayed wings signify protection, or yellow or gold, denotes generosity and elevation of mind.

Leaves are the emblem of truth.

Talbot — one of a breed of greyhound, white-colored, quick-scented, hunting dogs with long pendulous ears, now extinct.

P. 192 A-vol. 10 — Archaeologia Contiana, shows 6 different Love-shields — i.e. — Lovelace-Eynsham; Lovelace-Peckham; Lovelace-Harmon; Lovelace-Clement; Lovelace-Goldwell; Lovelace-Eynsham-Lewknor. See pages 3, 9, 23, 25, 27 & 30.

Bibliography

Bardsley — *Dictionary of English & Welsh Sirnames* — London 1901.

Foster — *London Marriage Licenses.*

Vol. 17 — *Virkus Magazine of History and Biography.*

Vol. 1 — *Memoirs of Georgia* & Vol. II Page 514 —p. 923 & p. 105.

Vol. 7 — Mackenzie — *Colonial Families of U.S.*

Vols. 39 & 51 — p. 176 — *New York Biography and Gen. Records.*

Vol. 9 — *Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors in Rev. War.*

Vol. IV — *History of North Carolina.*

Vol. IV — Owen — *Alabama History and Biography.*

Who's Who in Tennessee.

History of Southeast Missouri.

Bowditch — *Suffolk Surnames* — 1858.

Barber — *British Family Names.*

Harrison — *Surnames of the United Kingdom,* 1912.

PART I — ENGLISH ANCESTRY OF THE LOVELACE (LESS) FAMILY

CHAPTER I — Earliest Records

John Lovelace, the first of the name of whom we find record, was living in 1300, and had sisters or aunts named Marien Shelke and Elizabeth Gateman (p. 54, vol. XX, *Archaeologia Contiana,* fr. Seager's "Baronaquim").

John Lovelace (generation 2), his son, purchased in 1367 fr. William Kinet a manor in Bethersden, west of the parish church, which was afterwards variously known as "Bethersden," "Bethersden-Lovelace," and "Lovelace Place" (*Hasted's Kent,* ed. 2 VII, 489, in final draft copy fr. p. 394, etc., vol. 27, *Vir. Mag.*). He was probably the builder and proprietor of Lovelace Place. In 1876 this ancient mansion had been taken down but a modern substantial farm house on the site contains some oak panelling and the Hulse Arms in stained glass, removed from the ancient edifice (p. 184, vol. X, *Arch. Cont.*, "The Kentish Family of Lovelace," by Rev. A. J. Pearman).

John Lovelace (g. 3), m. Johanna ————. In 1391 he witnessed a deed; mentioned as proprietor of Lovelace Place in 1412 when he bo't some marble pits in Bethersden of John Gybon. d. before Apr. 15, 1417, when a charter fr. Henry V (reigned 1413-1422) mentions his heirs as landholders in Bethersden, and bur. with wife Joane or Johanna in Bethersden Church. He was the ancestor of the various branches of the Lovelace family, *i.e.*, Brayford, Sedingbourne or Sittingbourne, Kingsdown and Huxley.

Child. (4) — vols. X and XX, *Arch. Cont.* of John (g. 3).

1. William, d.s.p. Aug. 26, 1459, when as heir he was succeeded by his brother Richard. Bur. in Bethersden

Church with inscription showing license was given in 1460 by Henry VI for the founding of a Chantry in the Chapel of Bethersden to pray daily for the soul of William Lovelace and his parents, John and Johanna Lovelace.

+2. Richard, b. betw. 1390 and 1395, d. 1466, m. heiress of Eynsham.

3. Robert, living at Bethersden in 1437, d. 1466. In 1414 he became owner of two pieces of land, called Wilcooks at Snode, doubtless Snode Hill. Mentioned in list of Kentish Gentlemen in 1434. May 17, 1437 (15th year of the reign of Henry VI) his name appears in a grant with Richard Lovelace.

Child. (3) of Robert (g. 4) — p. 396, vol. 27, *Vir. Mag.*, and vols. X and XX, *Arch. Cont.*

a. Poss. Launcelot, erroneously ascribed to Richard.

b. Poss. Adrian, mentioned with Richard "Lovelas" in letters patent of Edward IV and Richard III and confirmed to them by Henry VII.

c. William (g. 5) of Faversham where he d. in 1473. His will of that year directed that his property be sold and proceeds divided among his daughters and son William, then under age, to be "scholed" out of the profits in land in Bethersden. Seager's "Baronaquim" refers to his "cousin" Sir Richard, patron of the Chantry of Bethersden. He was also of Merton in Surrey, being one of those pardoned in 1450 for share in Jake Cade's Rebellion. Oct. 1, 1455 he was supervisor of the will of Thomas Heath of Woolwich.

Child. (3) of William (g. 5).

A. Ellen, m. William Stephens of Kent. By some she is ascribed to be the dau. of William of Wickhambreaux. Her dau. Johanna Stephens, m. (1) John Nethersole, Esq., and m. (2) Richard Simonds of Corden, co. Dorset. Her dau. and sole heir, b. Nov. 29, 1579, Faversham, was mother of Sir Simon D. Ewes. In 1591 there was erected in a room at Coxden, over the chimney of the dining hall, Coxden

Arms with Lovelace and Eynsham quarterly (p. 55, vol. XX, *Arch. Cont.*).

+B. Thomazine Mary, m. Thomas Honeywood.

C. William, b, at Wickhambreaux (records of New Romney), admitted to franchise of Romane June 1, first year of Richard III. He left no s., so property at Bethersden devolved on relatives Sir Richard and William of Kingsdown. But he could have been the father, not brother, of Ellen, who m. William Stephens.

4. A dau. who m. a Goldwell.

A sister of Col. Richard (4) above m. a Goldwell but not of direct ancestry of American Lovelace families.

Thomazine Mary Lovelace (g. 6), William (g. 5), Robert (g. 4), John (g. 3), (g. 2), (g. 1). She is shown in the records as "Mary, dau. of William Lovelace, whose ancestor had married the heir of Broxbourne" and as "dau. of Lovelace of Kingsdown in Kent" (p. 65, "Honeywood," *Visitation of*

Kent, 1574 A-H), m. Thomas Honeywood of Honeywood, Baron of Hythe, thirteenth year of the reign of Henry IV, or 1412. (Henry IV reigned 1399-1413.) He d. temp. Edward IV (reigned 1461-1483), s. of William Honeywoode, Gent. of Postline, co. Kent and Katherine ————.

Child. (3), Honeywoode (g. 7) — *Visitation of Kent*, 1592, p. 104, Arms and Crest described.

1. Robert, a priest.

2. A dau. who m. a Tonge, probably of the Tonge family shown in vols. 42 and 54, *Visitations of Kent*, but not definitely shown.

3. John, m. (1) Agnes Martin, dau. of Henry Martin of Graveney, m. (2) Alys Barnes, dau. of William Barnes of Wye.

Child. (5), Honeywoode, 2 by first wife and 3 by second wife (g. 8) of John (g. 7).

a. Joane, m. Ferrys.

+b. John, m. Mildred Hales.

+c. Robert, m. Mary Atwater.

+d. Bennett, m. John Turney.

+e. Margaret, m. Edward Hales.

b. John, m. Mildred Hales (dau. of John Hales, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, of Dungeon in co. Canterbury and Isabel, dau. of Thomas Harry), who was s. of John Hales (of Tynterden, 1468), s. of Henry Hales (of Halden in Tenforden, m. Julianna Capell, dau. of Richard Capell of Lenden in Tenterden), s. of John Hales of Halden, s. of Thomas Hales (of Hales Place in Halden in the co. of Kent). (Arms described p. 58 *Visitation of Kent*, 1619-21, vol. 42), s. of Nicholas Hales (Knight, brother and heir to Sir Robert Hales, Knight), s. of Nicholas Hales (of Hales Place in Kent). *Visitation of Kent*, 1574 and 1663 to 1668.

Child. (8), Honeywood (g. 9) of John (g. 8).

A. Thomas, eldest s. and heir, m. Margaret Belding, dau. of William Belding of Braborne, Kent; 1 child, Elizabeth, heir.

B. John, second s., m. Joanne Perry; 5 Honeywood child.

C. Christopher, third s., m. Anne Boine; 4 Honeywood child.

D. Joanne, m. Roger Moone.

E. Margaret d. young.

F. Isabell, m. Christopher Lashforde.

G. Bennett, m. John Drylande of Wye.

H. Mary, m. (1) Vincent Boys of Bouington, second s. of Thomas Boys of Goodneston, s. of William Boys (m. a dau. of Phillip of Novington), s. of Thomas Boys, s. of Johannes Boys (p. 38, vol. 42, pp. 20-23, vol. 54, "Boys," *Visitation of Kent,* Har. Soc. Pub.), m. (2) Edward Gaye of Petham.

Child. (3), Boys (g. 10) of Mary (g. 9).

I. Johannes, m. Dorothea Seade, dau. of William Seade of Raynha.

Child. (6), Boys (g. 11) of Johannes (g. 10) — p. 38, Har. Soc. Pub., vol. 42.

i, Elizabeth; ii, Mary; iii, William; iv, Thomas; v, Johannes; vi, Edward of Bouington, m. Jana Sanders (dau. of Edward Sanders or Sandere of Northborne and Anna Pendreth, who was dau. of Miles Pendreth of Northborne and Eliza Lowin, dau. of Thomas Lowin), s. of Amysa Sanders of Chilton (m. a dau. of Austen of Tynterden), s. of Johannes Sanders (of Chilton and St. Lawrence), s. of Recardus Sanders (of Chilton) (p. 77, vol. 42, Har. Soc. Pub.).

Child. (5), Boys (g. 12) of Edward (g. 11).

A. Johanes of Bouington, s. and heir;

B. Edward, 2nd s.;

C. Vincent, 3rd s.;

D. Jana;

E. Elizabeth.

II. Thomas, 2nd s., m. a dau. of Petitt of Chillian.

III. Wm. of Uffington, 3rd son.

c. Robert Honeywood, 2nd s. and 1st ch. by 2nd wife. m. Mary Atwater, dau. of Robert Atwater of Lenham.

Child. (12) — Honeywood, (g. 9) of Robert (g. 8). p. 104, *Vis. of Kent,* 1592.

(1) Robert, eldest s. of Charinge, m. (1) Dorathe Rooke, (dau. of John Rooke of London, a Dr. of Civil "Lawe".) m. (2) Elizabeth Browne, (dau. of Sir Thos. Browne of West Beachworthe in co. Kent, & had 7 ch. by 1st wife & 3 by 2nd wife.

(2) Arthurus, m. Eliza Spencer, dau. of Johannis Spencer of Chard & who m. a dau. of David Wilkins of Tonge & gr. dau. of Johannus Spencer & Marie Collins of London. 11 Honeywood ch. — p. 120 vol. 42 — "Spencer." *Har. Soc. Pub.*

(3) Anthony, 3rd son.

(4) Isaake, 4th son.

(5) Katherine, m. (1) Wm. Flete, (s. & heir of John Flete of Bydanden, so. Kent & Margaret, dau. of Rycardes). s. of John Flete of Newslyford in Lincolnshire, s. of Thomas Flete of Roscall, m. Joane, dau. of Fynbaron. m. (2) Wm. Hemmarshe of Busshoppesbourne, p. 74 — "Flete" *Vis. of Kent.* 1674.

(6) Pressilla, m. Thos. Engeham of Goodenasten, (s. of Thos. Engeham & Eliza Monius, dau. Edward Monius of Waldershare Armiger.) s. of Vincent Engeham of Goodnaston, co. Canterbury, m. Edith Goodneston, dau. of Wm. Goodneston, s. of Wm. Engeham (of Engham Arm., m. Ancia Horne of Horheplate). s. of Wm. Engeham of Engeham). m. Joanna, dau. & heir of Thomas Pickelsden). s. of Thomas Engeham, (m. Pebonilla Plurenden, dau. of Thos. Plurenden on Woodchurch). s. of Mores Edingham of Engham. p. 116—*Vis. of Kent.* (1663-66).

Child. (2) Engeham. (g. 10) ch. of Pressilla Honeywood (g. 9).

1. Rowlandus of Grayes, 2nd son.

2. Edwin, 1st s. & heir. m. Eliza Euelin, dau. of John Euelin of Godstone, in co. Surrey. 5 Engeham ch.

(7) Mary, m. Geo. Morton of Estewer.

(8) Anna, m. Harles Harles of Thanysigton, (s. of Thomas Hales of Tonington & 1st wife, Joane, dau. of Clement Holway) s. of John Hales of Dangeon, (See ancestry of Edward Hales who m. Margaret Honeywood, dau. of John Honeywood & gr. dau. of Mary Lovelace), (6). 2 Hales ch. were Robert & Thomas of Bekesborne who m. Anne Payton, dau. of Sir Thomas Payton of Knoulton, co. Kent., their 3 Hales ch. were Sir Robert of Bekesborne a Baronet; Stephen; Samuel of New Windsor who m. Frances Benet, 3rd dau. of Sir Robt. Benet, Knight & surveyor of the lands of the Castle of Windsor & Elizabeth Garnet, heir of Robt. Garnet of Bloxbourne, co. Hart. 3 Hales ch. p. 218—*Vis. of Berkshire* —1665, Vol. 1 — "Hales of New Windsor."

(9) Grace, m. Mychell Henage of London.

(10) Elizabeth, m. Geo. Woodwarde of Lee, co. Buck.

(11) Suzon, m. Richarde Remchinge of Norff.

(12) Dorothea, d. unm.

d. Bennett Honeywood, (g. 8), 1st dau. by 2nd wife of John Honeywood, (g. 7) m. John Turney of Saltwood in Kent who was s. of John Tourney of Callys. * child. — Thomas Tourney (g. 9) m. Alys Blashinden, dau. of John Blechinden of Mersham co. Kent. Their 12 Tourney ch. (g. 10) were 1. John, 1st s.; 2. Thomas, 2nd s.; 3. Robert, 3rd s.; 4. Bennett, m. Ambrose Ward of Sandgate Castle; 5. Ann, m. Wm. Thawytis of Cosmos Bleane; 6. Jane, of Brodshill, m. Stephen Gybbes or Gibbs of Barham, 4th s. of Wm. Gibbs (of Elmeston & 1st wife, Jane Goson, dau. of Simon Goson

*A younger brother of John Tourney, m. Joane Selling, dau. of John Selling, s. of Richard Sellings (of Saltwood, co. Kent., m. Elizabeth Brockhall, dau. of Thos. Brokhall, one of the heirs of John Brockhall). s. of Wm. Brockehull Esq., s. of John Brockehull, Knight, (m. Ida, dau. of John Kerrell, cousin & heir to John Kerrell). s. of Thomas Brockhull, Knight s. of Wm. Brockhull, Knight, s. of Warren Brokhull, Knight, p. 34—"Brokhull," *Vis. of Kent,* 1574.

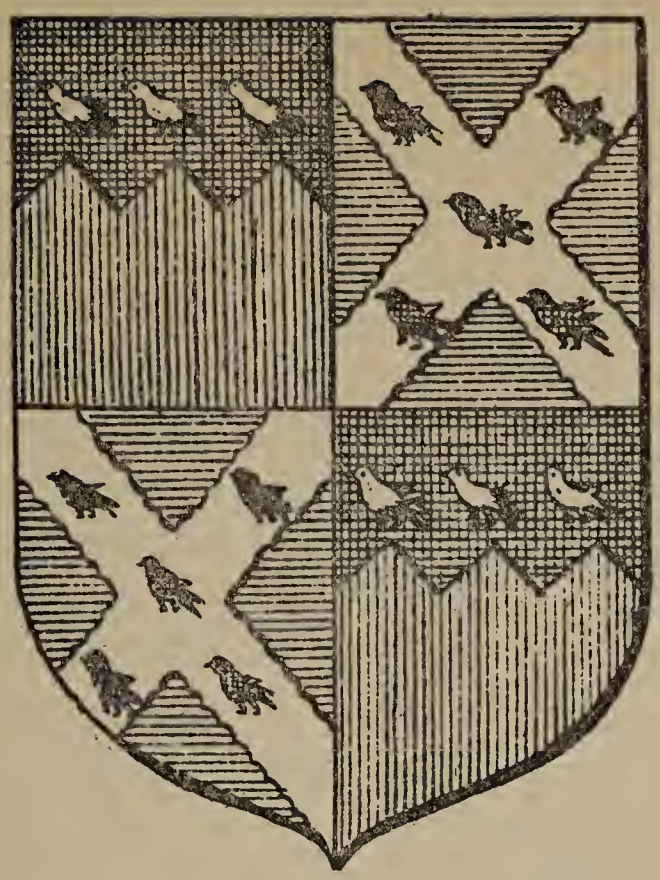
of Ash, co. Kent). s. of Johanes Gibbs, (m. Margaret Champney, dau. & heir of Richard Chapney of Gloucester), s. of Thos. Gibbs (m. Alice Trewnerall), s. of Jenkin Gibbs of Combe, m. Anna Vedem, parish of Talkestone, co. Canterbury, near Devon). 6 Gibbs ch. shown on p. 65—"Gibbs of Canterbury"—*Vis. of Kent*—1619; 7. Margaret; 8. Alyce; 9. Amie; 10. Marge; 11. Katherine; 12. Ammie. "Tourney," *Vis. of Kent* — 1574.

e. Margaret Honeywood, 2nd dau. by 2nd wife of John Honeywood (g. 7), m. Edward Hales, of Tenterden, (2nd s. of Jacobus Hales of Henley, upper Thames). 6 Hales ch. (g. 9) were 1. John, m. Mary Horne, dau. of Robt. Horne, Bishop of Winchester; 2. Robert; 3. Wm.; 4. Edward, m. (1) Maria Ford, dau. & heir of Stephen Ford of Tenderton. m. (2) Martha Hales, dau. of Thomas Hales; 5. Elizabeth, m. Wm. Austin of Tenterton; 6. Jane, m. Thos. Honeywood. p. 5—"Austin," p. 82, Honeywood, *Vis. of Kent*—1663. p. 58 — "Hales" — *Vis. of Kent* — 1619, & p. 56-1574.

p. 733 — Barry's — *Essex Pedigree's.*

Col. Richard Lovelace or Louelace, (g. 4), John (3), (2), (1), b. betw. 1390 & 1395, Sittingbourne. He was apprenticed to Wm. Foucher & admited freeman of Mercers Company, London, in 1415. In 1459 he succeeded his brother William as proprietor of Lovelace Place. He was ancestor of the direct line of Bethersden Lovelace's. Res. at Queenshithe, London, in time of Henry VI. Purchased Bayford Castle, known as "Bayluce," & Goodneston Manor in Kingsdown. He was Marshal of Calais. Pardoned in 1450 for participation in Jake Cade's insurrection. He d. 1466 when will was probated. Will dated Apr. 4-1466, written in Latin, in which he describes himself as "Citizen & Mercer of London," mentions by name only "younger son" John, to whom he left manors of Bayford & Goodnestone in Sittingbourne & dau. Katherine to whom he willed the manor of Hever in Kings-

Lovelace Eynsham



Put up in Hurley Church in 1558. Granted to Richard Lovelace of Kynsdown, who d. 1466. A direct ancestor of Gov. Francis and Sir William Lovelace and hence of all American Lovelace-Loveless families.

down. By success in business as well as by marriage he acquired considerable wealth.

M. dau. & heiress of Eynsham through whom he acquired much property and whose arms all his descendants bore as quarterings.

Child. — (6) — (g. 5) p. 125, *Visitation of Kent* — 1619, erroneously gives Lancelott of Bayford in Sittingbourne as father of these children, instead of Richard. But p. 395, Vol. 27, *Vir. Mag.* notes how Pearman has proved this to be an error. Also p. 93, *Peckham Genealogy*, erroneously ascribes him to be a son as well as heir of William who d. 1549, and introduces another generation as "Launcelott of Bayford." This appears to be based upon *Vis. of Kent* — 1574 — British Museum Mss.

1. John 1st — d.s.p. while young & bur. in Margrave.

+2. William, 2nd s. b. 1435, m. Laura Peckham.

3. Richard, b. abt. 1440. He was knighted July 17, 1497 at Bridge Foote, after battle of Blackheath; an active Yorkist in the War of the Roses: Marshal of Calais; Captain of Men of Kent & of St. Mark's Castle — of Bethersden & Sittingbourne; Inherited Lovelace Place & succeeded by nephew William (g. 6) (b. 1480) as proprietor thereof: — Patron of the Chantry at Bethersden in 1492: — mentioned as "cousin" in will of Wm. (g. 5) of Bethersden s. of Robert (g. 4): — Dec. 4, 1492, was given a pension for his services: — Feb. 11, 1486, he received annuity out of town of Calais & ten days later he & Adrian Lovelace were confirmed in previous grant of letters patent. He d. before 1511 when he is mentioned as deceased. He was Captain & Marshal of Calais; — an eminent soldier. Bur. in Sittingbourne, Kent, with monument. Left no ch. but had m. Elizabeth Cromer or Crowman, probably late in life. She was dau. of Jacob Crowner & gr. dau. of Sir. Wm. Cromer, Sheriff of Kent, whom Jake Cade beheaded. She m. 2nd Sir Wm. Finch, p. 43, A-4—*Visitation of Kent* 1574, which shows Crowner lineage chart. p. 64 — Lowelas chart. *Vis. of Kent.* 1574.

4. John 2nd., b. abt. 1445, — inherited Manor of Bayford & Goodnestone & Hurley in Burkshire. Supposed ancestor of the Barons Lovelace of Hurley — a religious house of the Benedictine monks. His probable son was + Richard or "Rycharde" Lovelace (6) who m. Anna Ward.

+5. Anne, m. Robert Cheney.

6. Katherine, d.s.p. as the Manor of Hever, in Kingsdown Kent, which she had received by the will of her father, reverted to her brother William (g. 5) who bequeathed it to his elder son John who d. 1546. She m. before Dec. 14, 1485, to Wm. Founteyne. It is stated that the first who took the sir name Founteyne was John de Fonte, called also De Fontibus de Salle, who flourished in the latter end of the reign of Henry III & was much in favor with Roger Bigod, Earl of

Norfolk. He d. in the early part of the reign of Edward I. p. 590, Vol. I, Burke, — *Landed Gentry of Great Britain* — 1879 — "Fountayne of Harford."

Anna Lovelace, (g. 5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1), m. Robert Cheney of Cralle in Sussex & Hingham. 3rd s. of Symon Chaney of Cralle who m. Eleanor Nottingham dau. & heir of John Nottingham. 2nd s. of Sir Richard Cheney of Sherland, Knight, b. abt. 1363 as 10 y. old in 36th y. of reign of Edward III, (1327-1377, m. Margery Eliza Crall, dau. & co-heir of Robert Crall of Sussex & his wife Margaret Peplasham, dau. of Simon Peplamsham). 1st s. of Sir Robert Cheney of Sherland in "ye Isle of Sheppey," co. Kent. (bro. & heir Wm. Cheney, 1st s.,) age 30 in 38th y. of the reign of Edward III, therefore b. abt. 1335. 2nd s. of Wm. Cheney, (m. Margaret Sherland, dau. & heir of Sir Robert Sherland). s. & heir of Alexander Cheney, who d. 24th yr. of reign of Edward or 1296, m. Agnes, dau. of Wm. de Say, by whom came the manor of Patricksbourne, co. Kent.

Child. — (3) (g. 6) — Cheney

1 — Humphrey or Henry, of Hingham in Milsted. These children received property "near Callis" from their uncle Sir Richard Lovelace, (g. 5), (m. Eliz. Cromer). m. Alice Wootton, dau. of Sir Nicholas Wootton or Edwin Wootton of Marlherb. Their s., Johne S. Cheney of Callis & Hingham, m. Eliza Gules, dau. of Hugonis Gules & had a s. William Cheney of Hingham in Milsted who m. Eliz. Ashley dau. of John Ashley of co. Norff.

Child.—(3) (g. 7) of Wm. & Eliz. (Ashley) Cheney.

a. Jonas of Hingham, m. Margareta Finche, dau. of Richard Finche of Kingsdown. Their 7 ch. were:

A. Johne's, m. Judithe, dau. & heir of Richard Wood of Hollingsbourne;

B. Astley, 2nd s.;

C. Agnes;

D. Norton;

E. Francisca, m. Thos. Swalman;

F. Dorothea;

G. Elizabeth.

b. Astley, 2nd s. m. Rebecka House.

c. Walterus, m. Artibus Magesta.

2 — Roger of Hingham & Milstead.

3 — John, 3rd, s.

P. 102 — "Cheney of Woodley" — *Vis. of Berkshire* — Vol. 11.

P. 193 — *Arch. Cont.* — Vol. X.

CHAPTER II — The Hurley Branch

Rycharde or Richard Lovelace, (g 6), John (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1) of Hurley, co. Berks. Knighted Aug. 5, 1599. Member of Parliament fr. Berkshire in 1601, fr. Abington in 1604-1611, Windson, 1614 & Berks. again, 1622. Sheriff of Berks. in 1611. Created Lord Lovelace of Hurley, May 30, 1627. Fuller says, "He had the success to light on the King of Spain's West Indian fleet, wherewith he & his posterity are the benefactors," in his "*Worthies of Berkshire.*" d. 1634. Ricardus Lovelace was called before Charles (Carolus) I in 1628 or 3rd y. of reign of Charles I, — (1625 to 1649).

m. Anne Warde, 4th dau. of Richard Warde (of Hurst, co. Berks. m. Colubre, dau. of Wm. Lamberde of Chersey in co. Surrey, Esq., & Alyce Anne Tasborough, dau. of Thos. Tasborough), eldest s. & heir of Thomas Warde (of Wynkefelde, co. Berks., Esq., m. Maude Moore of Burton, co. Bucks.), s. & heir to Thos. Warde (of Poswick, co. York., m. Elizabeth Cunnington, dau. of Wm. Cunnington of co. Hunt.), 3rd s. of Christopher Warde of same place, m. Margaret, dau. of Sir Wm. Gascoigne. (?) p. 57 — "Warde of Hurst" — Arms pictured — *Vis. of Berkshire,* 1566, Vol. I.

Child. (2 of record & prob. 3 or more others). (G. 7)

+1 — Rychard, prob. Sir Richard who m. (1), Catherine Hill & (2) Margaret Dodsworth.

2 — Elizabeth, of Hillingdon, co. Middlesex, & after of Kilthropin, in 1630, m. as 2nd wife, Walter Houghton of Kings Cliff in Northampton, p. 6, *Vis. of co. of Rutland* — 1618-19. p. 101 — "Houghton of Wormley," — *Vis. of Hampshire,* pictures Houghton Arms. He was s. of Toby Houghton of Kilthrope, co. Rutland, in 1618, who m. Mary Peyton of St. Edmonds who is bur. in co. Suffolk. Toby

Houghton recd. a patent Nov. 1, 1584, from Queen Elizabeth. He was s. of John Houghton of Kilthrope.

3 — Ursula, (prob.), "Sister of Richard, Lord Lovelace," m. John Hercy of Crutchfield Manor, Forest of Windsor, co. Berkshire, s. & heir of John Hercey, (of Crutchfield, m. Anna, dau. of Hugh Hargrave), s. of Johanes Hercy (of Charlton), s. of Thomas Hercy, s. of Johannes Hercy, s. of Stephen Hercy, s. of Thomas Hercy, s. of Hugo Hercy, co. Nottingham, s. of Maluisin Hercy who m. Theophania, dau. of Gilberti Darchis, ch. of Gilbertus de Arches Hercy, p. 97, "Hercy of Crutchfield," *Vis. of Berkshire*—1623, Vol. 1.

Child. Hercy (6) (g. 8) of Ursula (g. 7), p. 223, *Vis. of Berkshire* — 1665.

a. John, b. abt. 1605 as "of Crutchfield, Esq. ae. 60, Mar. 30, 1665." m. Mary Anger or Aungier, dau. of Edward Anger of Cambridge & bro. to Gerard, Lord Anger.

Child. Hercy (5) (g. 9) of John (g. 8)

A. Thomas, s. & heir, b. abt. 1632 as ae. 23, Mar. 30, 1665;

B. Edward, 2nd s.;

C. Lovelace, 3rd s.;

D. Dorothy, 1st dau.;

E. Mary, 2nd dau.

b. Richard.

c. Rudolphus.

d. Anne, m. Hugh Calverley of Lawrence Waltham, co. Berks.;

e. Margaret, m. John Ash of Warfield;

f. Eliz., m. George Weldon of Shottesbroke.

4—Anna, (prob.), "Sister of Sir Richard Lovelace of Hurley, co. Burkshire." p. 122, *Vis. of Warwick* — 1682. m. as his 2nd wife, John Mayne of Elmdon, Co. Warwick, ch. of Henry Mayne of Bonington in co. Hartford, (m. Alicea, dau. of Randolph or Randell of co. Buckshire), ch. of Robert Mayne of Bonington in co. Hartford. *Harlein Soc. Pub.* Vol. 12.

Child. (1), (Joseph Mayne)

5—Colebury or Calliberry, "dau. of Richard Lovelace & sister of Richard, Lord Lovelace," m. (1), Richard Beake, s. of Richard Beake (of White Knights in Berkshire, Esq., chief querry to Queen Elizabeth, m. Elizabeth Reade, 2nd dau. of Thomas Reade of Barton, near Abington, co. Berks. Esq. who d. 1575 having m. Anne Hoo, dau. of Thomas Hoo of co. Hartford), ch. of Thos. Bek, (m. Joan, dau. of Nycholas Thorne of the parish of Sunying in co. Berks.), ch. of Marmaduke Bek, (m. Margaret ?), ch. of Thos. Bek of White Knights, (m. Isabel, dau. & heir of Michell in co. of Wiltshire). p. 2—"Beake of Whiteknights," *Vis. of Berks.*, Vol. 1.

Thos. Hoo, Esq. of Hoo, co. Hartford, d. June 11, 1551, (m. dau. & heir of John Newnham or Newman of Hatfield), ch. of Thos. Hoo, d. Mar. 20, 1516, m. Maude, dau. of Edmond Bardolph, Esq.) s. of Thos. Hoo, (ob. 1480, m. dau. & heir of Norwood) s. of Thos. Lo Hoo, (ob. Aug. 23, 1420, m. 1st, Ellena, dau. of Thos. Felton), s. of Wm. Hoo, (d. Nov. 22, 1410, m. Alice (d. Oct. 10, 1456) dau. & heir of Thos. St. Omer). s. of Thos. Loo Hoo (ob. Sept. 28, 1380, m. Eliz. who d. July 22, 1393, dau. & heir of Sir John St. Leger), s. of Robt. Loo Hoo (d. Nov. 1, 1341, m. Hanice who d. Sept. 2, 1344, dau. of Faulke Lo Fitz Warren), s. of Robert Loo Hoo, (d. May 9, 1310, m. Beatrix who d. May 28, 1314, dau. of Alexander Lo of Ardenville in Normandy). s. of Alexander, Lord Hoo (m. Darnell, dau. of Alexander, King of Scots). s. of Robt. Lo Hoo, (d. Aug. 1, 1166, m. Rosamond, who d. 1191, dau. of Tho. Lord Chelron). s. of Robert Lo Hoo, d. Feb. 23, 1129, m. Wilmont who d. Jan. 24, 1148, dau. of John Malmayes of Normandy, s. of Thos. Lo Hoo (d. 1042, bur. Grey Friars, Bedford, m. Agnes, dau. of Sir Wm. Wawton. She d. Oct. 19, 1048), s. of Robert Lo Hoo, (d. Oct. 26, 1000, bur. Lewton, m. Anne, dau. of John, Lord Griffeth of Wales). p. 203 — "Reade of Barton." *Vis. of Berkshire,*" Vol. II, arms pictured. Colberry Lovelace m. (2) Syman Mayne of Denton, s. of Henricus Mayne & Alice Randolph & bro. of

John Mayne who m. her sister, Alice Lovelace.

Child. — (4) — Beake & (2) — Mayne.

a. Marmaduke 2nd s., m. Elizabeth Slater, dau. of Slater of Haddenham, co. Buckinghamshire. 2 Beake ch. were Coleberry & Elizabeth.

b. Eliza, m. Thomas Douer of Berkshire.

c. Henry, of Haddenham in Buckinghamshire, m. Frances Billiard, dau. of John Baliard of Huntingdon, co. Nottingham.

Child. (3) — Beake — p. 2 "Beake of Whiteknights" — *Vis. of Berkshire*, Vol. I.

A. Richard, eldest s., b. abt. 1630 as 4 y. old in Aug., 1634.

B. Henry, 2nd s.

C. Margaret.

d. Sarah, m. Allexander Crooke of Chilton in Buckinghamshire.

e. Simon Mayne of Denton, co. Buckinghamshire, Esq., only s. of Symon Mayne, b. abt. 1611 as ae. 8 in 1619. m. Jane Burgoine, dau. of John Burgoine of Bedford.

f. Celliberry Mayne, m. Thos. Bulstrode, (s. & heir apparent to Henry Bulstrode of co. Buckinghamshire, Esq., Justice of the Peace of Upton, m. Mary Reed, dau. of Thomas Reed of Barton, co. Berkshire). 1st s. of Edward Bulstrode, (m. Cicely Crook, dau. Sir John Crook of Clifton or Chilton, in Buckinghamshire). s. & heir of Thomas Bulstrode, (m. Anne Barker). s. & heir of George Bulstrode, (m. Joan Pigott, dau. of Sir Thomas Pigott, Sarg. at Law). s. & heir of Edward Bulstrode, s. of Hughley Bulstrode or Hedgerley Bulstrode, in Buckinghamshire, m. (1) Mary Empson, dau. of Richard Empson). s. & heir of Richard Bulstrode, (keeper of the great wardrobe to Margaret, Queen to Henry VI, — later controller of the house of King Edward IV & to his prince son. m. Alice, dau. & heir of Richard Kniffe, of Chalvey, time of Henry VI, which Alice was also co-heir with John Wiget, Thomas Thorne, Nicholas Clopton of Langley-Marsh,

& Rons of Westminister). s. & heir Wm. Bulstrode, of Upton who m. Agnes Bray, dau. of Wm. Bray, p. 12 — "Bulstrode of Upton," *Vis. of Buckinghamshire*, Vol. 5 Har. Soc. Pub.

Child. (3) — Boulstrode.

Samuel, b. abt. 1630 as ae. 4 in 1634.

Simon, 2nd s.

Henry, 3rd s.

P. 12 — "Boulstrode of Upton," *Vis. of Buckinghamshire*," 1634 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 58.

Sir Richard Lovelace (g. 7) Sir Richard (6) John (5) Richard (4). The first Baron Lovelace, i.e. the first of this family to attain the rank of nobility. Elevated to peerage May 31, 1627 by King James I, (reigned 1603-25). The title became extinct in 1737 with the death of Neville, s. of Gov. John Lovelace. Formerly he was Sir Richard Lovelace of Hurley, Kent, (1599) — of Abington, (1604-11) & Windson (1614). M.P. fr. Berkshire in 1601. Created Lord Lovelace. He d. 1670. p. 158 — *Vis. of Berkshire,* Vol. 2.

m. (1) Katherine Hill or Hely, Wid. of Wm. Hyde & dau. of George Hill.

m. (2) Margaret Dodsworth, dau. of Wm. Dodsworth of London.

Child. (5) — (g. 8).

+1. John, b. 1616, m. July 9, 1638, Lady Anne Wentworth.

2. Richard, b. 1620, d. 1668, prob. the Richard Lovelace Esq. of Wargrave — Justice of the Peace—Reading Assizes 1665/6. "Francis Lovelace his brother." — "Bro. to ye Lord Lovelace." "Dwelt at Kiham."

3. Francis of Hurley, b. abt. 1618 — a 2nd s. In early records he was long confused with Gov. Francis Lovelace of New York State who was a relative but of the Bethersden line. Some records say Francis Lovelace, "cousin of Gov. Francis Lovelace," was m. to Ann King. His grandson, John Lovelace was Gov. of N.Y. in 1709. He d. before Jan. 21,

1679 when his accounts were exhibited. He had m. Ann King.

Child. (1 or more) — (g. 9) — p. 91 — *Vis. of Kent* — 1663.

a. William, m. Mary King, dau. of Wm. King of Iver, co. Bucks.

Child. (1 or more) — (g. 10).

A. John, m. Oct. 20, 1702, Charlotte Clayton. He inherited the Barony of Hurley from his 2nd cousin, John who m. Margarete Pyre, in 1693, & became the 4th Lord Lovelace. John was also Gov. of New York State & erroneously called a nephew of Gov. Francis Lovelace. He was also the 4th Baron of Hurley. His name appears in Reading Assizes as John, Lord Lovelace of Hurley, in 1665/6. He was appointed Capt. General & Vice Admiral & Chief of the Provinces of New Jersey & Gov. of New York by Queen Ann, Mar. 23, 1708. On Apr. 22, 1708, he sailed for New York, arriving there Dec. 18, 1708. He began active duties as governor in Jan., 1709. The village of Hurley, in Ulster Co., N.Y. derives its name from him. He d. May 6, 1709, from exposure at sea. He was succeeded as Gov. of N.Y. Colony by Ingaldsby. p. 187 — *Le Neve's Knights*. His wife, Charlotte Clayton of Richmond was dau. of Sir John Clayton & Alice Bowyer of Kent. Charlotte, Lady Lovelace, relict of Rt. Hon. John, Lord Lovelace, deceased, was granted administration of his estate May 17, 1709. She returned to England after the death of her husband and sons & d. April 12, 1749. p. 93 — *Musgrave's Obituaries*.

Child. (5) — (g. 11) — p. 321, *Burke, Gen. Dict. of Eng., Irish & Scotch Peerages*. I. John, Lord Lovelace, Baron of Hurley, who survived his father but 2 weeks; II. Wentworth, who d. abt. a month before his father; III. Another son who d. before his father. IV. Lord Neville, 6th Lord Lovelace, Baron of Hurley, d. July 28, 1736, without issue, when the Barony of Lovelace of Hurley became extinct; V. Mary, "sister & heiress of Neville Lovelace, Lord Lovelace, m. Henry Beauclerck, duke of St. Albans. 6 Beauclerck ch. (g. 12) of

He died July 28, 1736, leaving no direct descendants.

Mary Lovelace (g. 11) were: — 1. Diana, b. June 24, 1741. — 2. Henrietta, b. Nov. 26, 1742. — 3. Mary, b. Nov. 25, 1743, m. July 6, 1782, Rev. Walter Williams of Harrow,, co. Middlesex. — 4. Henry, b. Aug. 12, 1745, m. Nov. 24, 1769 his cousin, Charlotte Drummond. — 5. Sidney. — 6. James, who became Lord Bishop of Hereford.

4. Elizabeth, m. Henry Martin, s. of Sir Henry Martin of Kent.

5. Martha or Margaret, m. Sir Geo. Stonehouse of

Radley, a barrister, b. 1603 as ae. 61 Mar. 16, 1664. 2nd s. of Sir Wm. Stonehouse of Radley, co. Berks. (m. Elizabeth Powell, dau. & sole heir of John Powell of co. Hereford). 1st ch. by 2nd wife of George Stonehouse, of Little Peckham, Kent, Esq. & Radley, co. Berks. End of the clerkes of the Greene Cloth to Queen Elizabeth in 1572. m. (2), Eliz. Woodruff, dau. Davy Woodruff, Alderman of London in 1554/6 & sister of Sir Nicholas Woodruff & wid. of Walter Lewson. 4 Stonehouse ch. (g. 9 of Martha g. 8) were a. Sir George Jr., b. abt. 1636; b. John; c. James; d. Elizabeth, m. (1) Sir Richard Studolf of Surrey. m. (2) Lord Byron. p. 217, *Vis. of Berkshire.* p. 497, Vol. III, Banks, *Dominant* & *Extinct Baronage of Eng.* 1807, p. 948, *Titled Nobility of Europe* — 1914.

Lord John Lovelace, Esq.; (g. 8) Sir Richard, (7), (6), John (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). b. 1616. d. Nov. 25, 1670. m. July 9, 1638, London, Lady Ann Wentworth. (b. 1623, d. May 7, 1697, dau. of Thomas Wentworth, (Earl of Cleveland, Baron of Nettlested & 4th Baron of Wentworth.) & Ann Crofts, (dau. of Sir John Crofts of Saxham, Suffolk). Lady Ann succeeded her niece, Henrietta Maria Wentworth, only ch. of her brother Thomas Wentworth, 5th Baron, when the niece d., unm., Apr. 23, 1686, — as Baroness of Wentworth).

"Rt. Hon. John, Lord Lovelace, Baron of Huxley in co. Berks., bachelor, ae. 22, m. July 9, 1638, Lady Anne Wentworth, ae. 15." — p. 236, *Marriage Licenses,* London, 1611 to 1828 & pub. 1887. *Har. Soc. Pub.,* Vol. 26. He was 3rd Lord Lovelace; 2nd Baron Lovelace of Huxley in co. Berks, ancestor of Lord Byron, the poet. p. 2447 — Burke, *Peerage* & *Baronetage* — 1930.

Child. (4 or more) — (g. 9) —

1. John, 3rd Baron Lovelace of Hurley, b. 1642, as age 20 at marriage. d. Sept. 27, 1693, when Barony of Hurley passed to his cousin John Lovelace, (g. 10), Gov. of

N.Y. State. (Wm. (9), Francis (8) Sir Richard (7), etc.) m. July 10, 1662, (License issued June 30, 1662), Martha or Margery Pyre, of Bradanham, Buckinghamshire, dau. of Sir Edmund Pyre, Knight & Baronet, who was an opulent shipbuilder. An early friend of the revolution, but as he was going to join the Prince of Orange with a considerable force, was made prisoner. On the ascension of the Prince to the throne he was made Captain. He lived in a prodigal & splendid style but lost his estates through debt. — p. 1028 — *Peerage, Baronetage & Knightage* — 1905, Bernard Burke. p. 434 — John Burke — *Extinct & Dormant Baronetcies of Eng.* 1838, "Pyre of Lekhampsted," with arms. p. 250, *Canterbury Marriages.* p. 551 — *Lincolnshire Pedigrees.* p. 321— Burke — *Gen. & Her. Dict. of Peerages of Eng. & Ireland & Scotland* — 1846. p. 63 — *Marriage Licenses, Tac. Off. Arch. of Cont.* — 1543-1869.

Child. — (5) — (g. 10) —

a. John, who d. infancy.

b. Martha.

c. Ann.

d. Catherine, who d. very young or infancy.

e. Martha again who succeeded her grandmother Lady Ann Wentworth as Baroness of Wentworth on May 7, 1697. She was b. abt. 1665, & m. Mar. 6, 1692/3, Rt. Hon. Sir Henry Johnson, a widower, ae. 32, of Fuston Hall & Blackwell, in Suffolk, who d. Sept. 29, 1719. She d. July 18, 1745, ae. 80, without issue, & was succeeded by her cousin Edward Noel, (Gr. gr. s. of Margaret Lovelace) to the Baroncy of Wentworth. He also inherited from her the estate of Brodenham which he sold in 1787 to John Hicks, Esquire.

2. Anne who d. unm.

3. Dorothy, of Little Queen St., co. Middlesex, b. abt. 1650, m. July 21, 1671, as his 2nd wife, Henry Drax, s. of Sir Henry Drax of Kent. He was collector of the Barbados, — also of Southampton Buildings, Middlesex. They

had no surviving issue but several Drax children were buried in St. Jo. Zachary's Church, London, p. 77 — *LeNeve's Knights*. p. 498, Vol. III, Banks, *Dominant* & *Extinct Baronage of Eng.* — 1807.

4. Margaret or Martha, 3rd dau., b. abt. 1644, d. Apr. 14, 1671, ae. 27, & bur. near Earl of Bath's monument in Westminster Abbey. m. Oct. 30, 1660, as his 1st wife, Sir Wm. Noel, (b. abt. 1642, d. Apr. 13, 1675, in 33rd y. 2nd Baronet Noel of Kirkby Mallory & only s. of Sir Varney & Elizabeth (Dixie) Noel. In 1670, having been created 1st Baronet of Kirkby Mallory, co. Leicester, Sir Varney Noel d. July 6, 1660. Sir Wm. Noel m. 2nd in 1672, Frances Humble Ward, dau. of Lord Ward. p. 388 — John Burke, *Dominant* & *Extinct Baronetcies of Eng.* — 1838, "Noel of Kirkby Mallory," which carried this family down to 1905). Her gr. gr. s., Sir Edward Noel, succeeded in her right to the Barony of Wentworth.

Child. (2) — Noel — (g. 10).

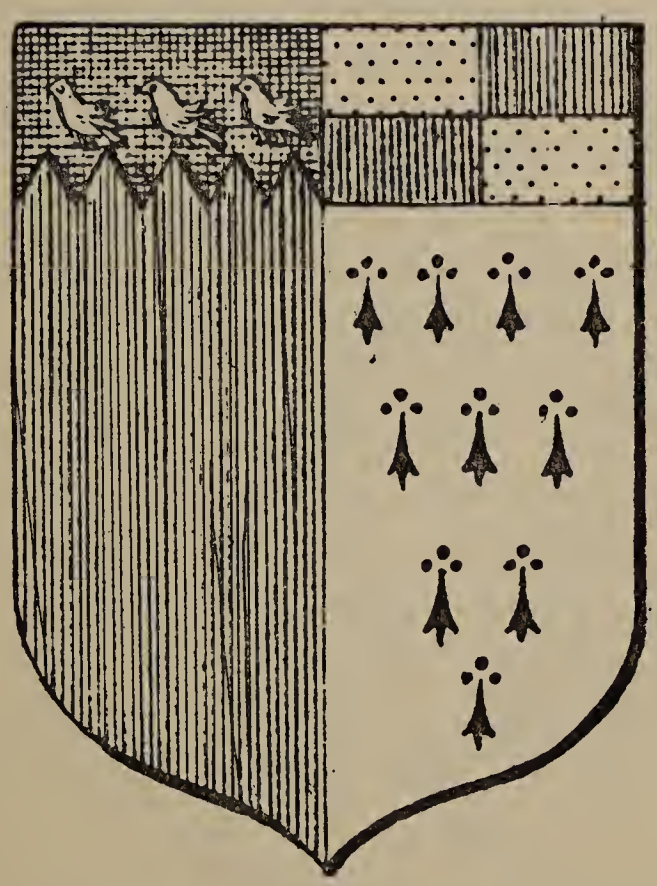
a. Sir Thomas, 3rd Bart. Noel, b. 1662, m. 1681, Anne Whitlock, d. Jan. 8, 1737, dau. of Sir. Wm. Whitlock, Esq. of Phillis Court, Oxfordshire. He d. 1688 without issue and was succeeded by his brother.

b. Sir John, 4th Bart. Noel, b. 1668, d. July 1, 1697, m. Mary Clobery (dau. & heir of Sir John Clobery, Knight of Winchester). They were ancestors of the remaining descendants of Margaret Lovelace including Anna Isabella Milbanke-Noel, b. May 17, 1792, m. (2) Jan. 1815, George Byron, 6th Lord Byron, the celebrated poet. P. 338 & 388 — John Burke, *Extinct* & *Dormant Baronetcies of Eng.* — 1838. Bernard Burke, *Peerage* & *Baronetage*, 1911 ed., p. 1199; 1921 ed., p. 1422. *Peerage, Baronetage* & *Knightage*, 1930 ed., p. 1539; — 1721 ed., p. 1422, p. 117, No. 3, Fairbanks *Book of Crests* — Earl of Lovelace. p. 74 — Fox Davies, *Armorial Families*, p. 948, Ruvigny, *The Titled Nobility of Europe* — 914.

CHAPTER III—The Hever, Kingsdown and Bayford Lines

William Lovelace, (g. 5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). b. abt. 1435. He was of Queenhithe, London; — First of Hever Place, which he had inherited from his sister Katherine: — He also had estates at Kingsdown, Bethersden, Bayluce & Maplescombe, in Kent. Ancestor of the Bayford line, residence, Bayluce, Kent. From him the descents are clear & the pedigrees perfect for all the other Kentish branches of the Lovelace Family. Confirmation of Arms, Dec. 2, 1564, in Queen's College, Oxford. d. 1495/6 in London. His will date July 24, 1495, & probated Sept. 3, 1496, mentions chil-

Lovelace Peckham



Arms carried by Sir William Lovelace, will dated 1496 — ancestor of Bayford line and also direct ancestor of Gov. Francis and Sir William, American progenitor.

dren, — John, to whom he bequeathed Hever; William & Margaret. It shows spellings of the name as Lovelas, — Louelas, Lowelace & Lovelace. He desired to be buried at St. Michael's, Queenhithe.

m. before Dec. 29, 1472, (when he was cited for marrying his "spiritual sister" — i.e. — a woman for whom in her infancy his mother had acted as sponsor, but the charge was dropped when he exhibited a dispensation —) Laura or Lora Peckham, 2nd ch. of James Reynold Peckham, (M.P. in 1435, b. abt. 1400, d. 1454). 8th ch. of Reginald Peckham, (m. Mrs. Alice Wypeham, wid. of Wm. Wypeham), 1st ch. of James de Peckham, (inherited estates of Yaldam from his brother Reginald, & m. (2) Mrs. Lora (de Moraunt) Cawne, dau. of Sir Thos. de Moraunt of Chevening & wid. of Sir Thomas Cawne), ch. of John Peckham, (d. abt. 1363, m. Ellen Bakeland, dau. of James & Joan Bakeland). ch. of Martin Peckham, (of Yaldam, m. Marjorie Aldham, dau. of Sir Thos. Aldham, lived reign of Edward II, (1307-1327), desc. of Sir Thos. Aldham who was at Acre with Richard I & prob. of Yaldem in 1191), ch. of John de Peckham, (held manor of Peckham in Parish of Hadlow, Kent, in reign of Edward I), ch. of John Peckham, Knight, (d. 21st y. of reign of Edward I or 1293, poss. of Manor of Peckham), ch. of John Peckham, (held manor of West Peckham in reign of Henry III & who returned with Richard Coeur de Lion from Siege of Acre in Palestine), ch. of Hugo Peckham (constable of castle of Tunbridge in 1st y. of reign John I or 1199. p. 81 etc. *Peckham Genealogy*.

Child. (4) — (g. 6)

+1. John, b. abt. 1478, m. Mary Harmon.

+2. William, b. abt. 1480, m. Mrs. Alice (Stevens) Shawe.

3. Margaret, "of co. Sussex" — mentioned in father's will, living in 1495, m. Wm. Boys or Bois of Wely, s. of Henry Boys of Hinton, p. 91, *Vis. of Hampshire*, 1530-1575-1622-1634 — *Harc. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 64. Boys arms pictured.

Child. — (1) — Boys (g. 7).

a. Thomas, m. Anne Bacon, dau. of Gregory Bacon of Michellmish.

Child. — (4) — Boys (g. 8)

A. Thomas.

B. Wm.

C. Gregory.

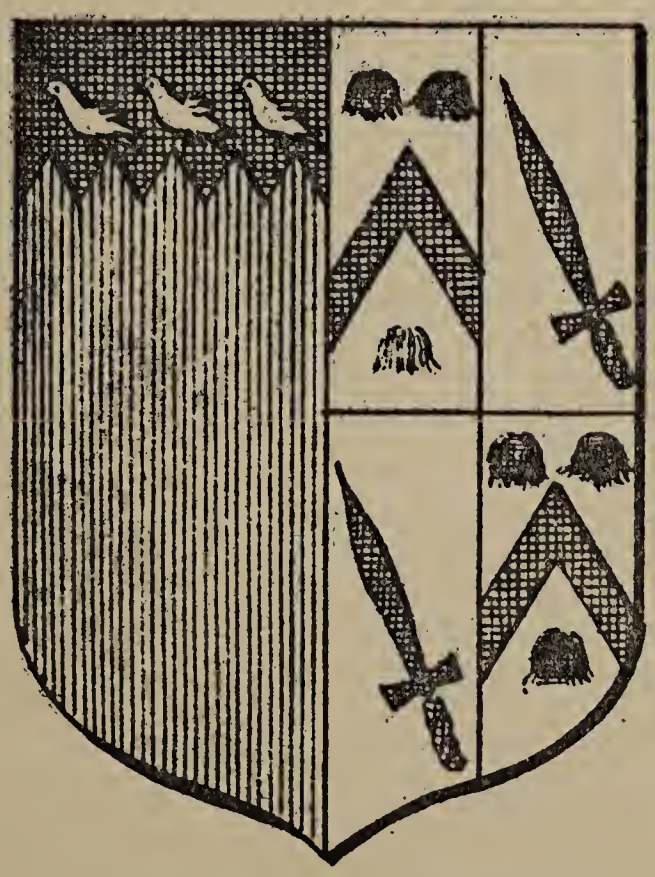
D. Peter.

4. Agnes, living in 1540 when she is referred to in the will of her brother William as Agnes Clerke.

Will of Reginald Peckham Sr., proved Mar. 27, 1534, mentions "cousin John Lovelace." Witness, Wm. Lovelace, p. 135 — *Peckham Genealogy*.

Will of Thos. Peckham, proved May 15, 1515, mentions cousin John Lovelace. p. 130, *Peckham Genealogy*.

Lovelace Harmon



Arms carried by John of Hever and his son, Henry Lovelace. They were not ancestors of American families.

John Lovelace (g. 6), Wm. (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). b. abt. 1478. He served on Commission for the Peace of Kent, May 20, 1531; was one of the Grand Jury who at Deptford, on May 11, 1536, found a "true bill" against Anna Boleyn; — known as "John of Kingsdown," — inherited Hever in Kingsdown & Brayford Castle from his father; — became ancestor of the Hever-Kingsdown Lovelaces; — owned property in London, — Maplescomb & Goodnestone; — supervisor of will of his brother, Wm. Lovelace in 1540. d. Feb. 15, 1548. Will dates Oct. 26, 1546. Bur. with wife in Kingsdown Church, where a brass with inscription remains. m. Mary Harmon, who d. Feb. 15, 1533, dau. of Wm. Harmon of Crayford.

Child. — (12) — (g. 7)

1. Margaret, Bur. May 12, 1551. m. June 19, 1548, as his first wife, Wm. Wombwell of Northfleet, co. Canterbury; ch. of Thomas Wombwell, (m. Elizabeth Ashton of Chidingstone), ch. of John Wombwell, (of Wombwell Hall of Northfleet). p. 6, *Vis. of Kent* — 1619-27 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 42.

Child. (1) Wombwell —

a. Thomas m. Margaretta Hatton, (dau. of Wm. Hatton of Gravesend & Joanna Walworth, dau. of Wm. Walworth). Their s. A. Sampson Wombwell, m. Katherine Bromley and had ch. Thos., Benetta & Maria Wombwell.

2. Alice*
3. Elizabeth*
4. Joys*
5. Dorothea
6. Wm. 3rd s., d.s.p.

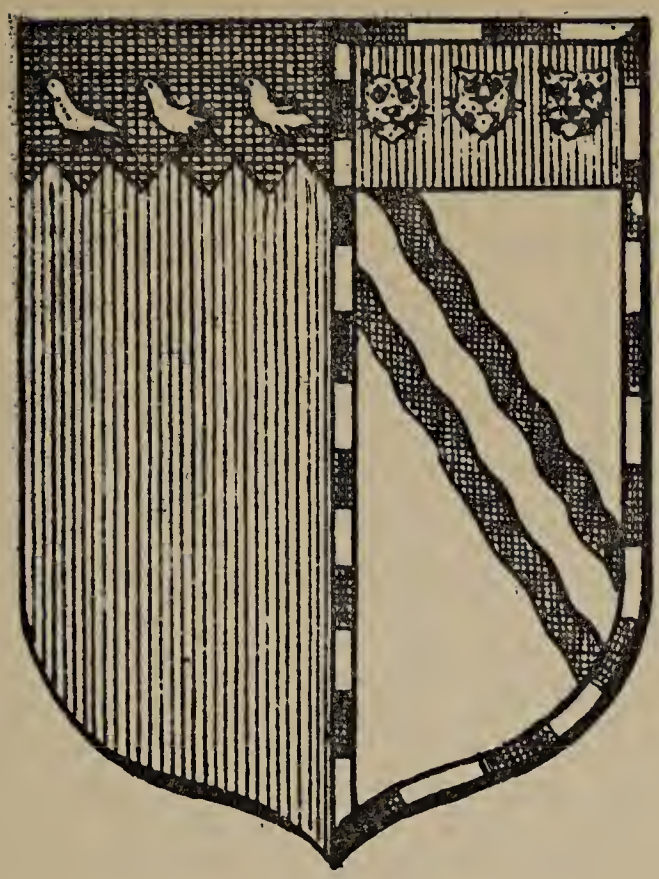
+7. Thomas, m. (1) Elizabeth Lewknor, m. (2) Elizabeth Clement.

+8. Henry, 2nd s., b. abt. 1524, m. Margaret Hamon.

9. Lancelot of London. 6th s. recd. from father's will 5 pounds sterling for charges at school. d. 1605. His will

*These ch. are mentioned in the will of their brother Henry Lovelace.

Lovelace Clement



proved June 2, 1605, specified he was to be bur. at Kingsdown near bros. Thomas & Henry. His account book fr. Mar. 25, 1584, to Nov., 1586, in British Museum. "Of St. Botolph's without Aldersgate."

10. Edward, *Arc. Cont.* p. 193, vol. X & p. 58, Vol. XX.

Child. (3) — (g. 8)

a. Agnes, mentioned in will of her uncle, Henry Lovelace.

b. Lancelot of Fleet St., London, who had children — a dau. who m. Allen Johnson; John; Tamazine, who m. ? Day.

c. John of Henley, co. Oxford. m. Elizabeth Frere, dau. of Edward Frere (of Oxford, Esq., m. Anna Bustard, dau. of John Bustard, Esq. of Adderbury, co. Oxford.) 2nd s. & heir of Wm. Frere, Esq., (of City of Oxford, Justice of the Peace in the city of Shyrem, m. Agnes Reve). p. 138, *Vis. of Oxford* — 1566-1634, *Harliean Soc. Pub.* Vol. 5.

Child. — (possible) — (g. 9).

A. Edward, of Wormley, Hertsfordshire — Gentleman. b. abt. 1631 as he was ae. 40 when he m. May 17, 1671, at All Hallows in the Wall, London, Mary Marsh of East Peckham who was then ae. 28. p. 90 — *Marriage Allegations in Registry of the Vicar General of Archbishop of Canterbury.*

B. Margery, "dau. of John Lovelace" m. John Fysher or Fisher, (s. & heir of John Fisher, m. Elizabeth Beausarvue who was one of the co-heirs of Wm. Beausarvue & dau. of John Beausarvue who lived in time of Edward IV & m. Jane Tauke.) Jane Tauke was dau. & co-heir of John Tauke who d. without heirs male in 1480.) He was s. of Edward Tauke, Esq. (m. Ellenor ?.), s. of Sir Robt. Tuke, Knight., s. of Thomas Tuke who lived in the time of Henry V. s. of Robert Tuke, s. of Wm. Tuke, (m. Maude, sister & heir to Thos. Worting who lived in the time of Edward IV), s. of Sir Wm. Tuke, Knight, (m. Isabelle, dau. of Sir. Wm. Overton).

Child. (4) — (g. 10) — *Fisher-Har. Soc. Pub.*, Vol. 64.

I. Sciprian.

II. Richard

III. John of Chilton Condover, in co. Southampton. m. Elizabeth Pyrce, dau. of John Pyrce.

Child. (7) — Fisher — p. 65 *Vis. of Hampshire. Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 64.

I. Dennys

II. Wm.

III. Robert.

IV. George

V. Margaret

VI. Richard

VII. Mary

IV. Elizabeth, m. John Barloe of Sleybith in co. Pembroke. 2 Barloe ch. were George & Wm.

11. William — 5th — s., m. poss. Alica Ellis, dau. of Stephen Ellis & had a s. Francis who was under 18 in 1605.

12. Reginald, m. Katharin Hodney or Hodnet.

Child. (5) — (g. 8) — p. 126 *Vis. of Kent* — 1619 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 42.

a. Elizabeth, m. a Hanson & was a widow in 1619.

b. Charles — in the wars of 1619 — had a dau.

c. Richard of Wormbley, will proved Apr. 30, 1623.

d. Matthew.

e. Robert, Gent. of Eynsworth Castle in Kent. d. 1630. m. Joanna Tooke (dau. of Walter & Angelette (Woodliff) Tooke & desc. from Tooke of Essenden, Wormley & Stanstead) p. 120 & 153 — *Vis. of Kent.* — 1619.

Child. (3) — (g. 9) — p. 168, *Vis. of Hertfordshire* — 1634.

A. Maria, m. Rev. Edward Polye, Vicar of Weston.

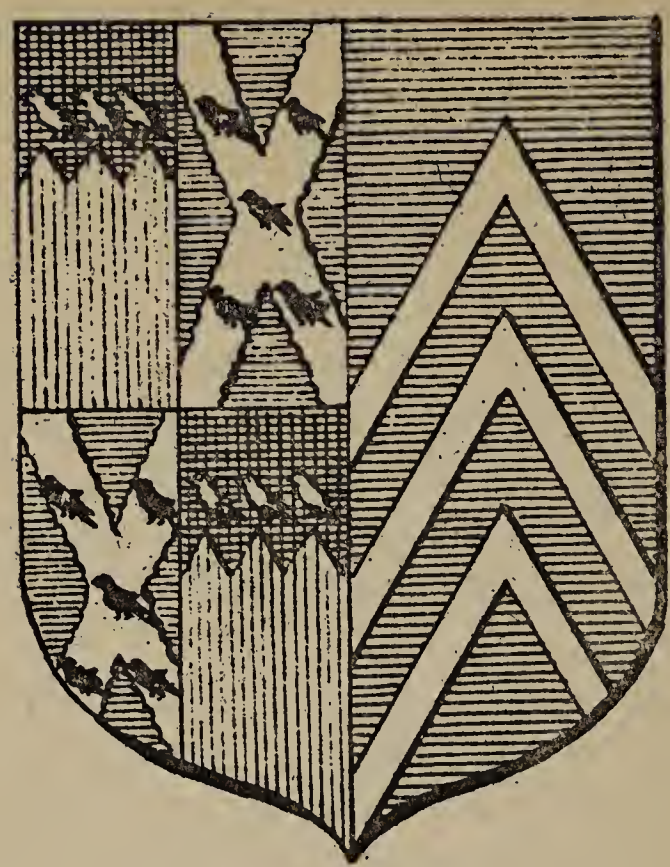
B. Anna, m. (1) Richard Broughton of Plumsted, m. (2) Thomas Twisden of Wrye, s. of Roger Twisden of Peckham, (m. Anna Wyat, dau. of Thomas Wyat of Allington), s. of Wm. Twisden of Chilmington etc. Anc. continued through 7 gens. p. 134 — *Vis. of Kent* —1619-21 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 42.

C. Robert, Vicar of Standon in 1619, m. Margaret Hyde, dau. Edward Hyde, of Hodham, who m. Margaret Simpson.

Thomas Lovelace (g. 7), John (6), William (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). Res. at Lovelace Place in 1554. Heir of his father d. 1605 & bur. at Hever in Kingsdown.

m. (1) Elizabeth Lewknor (dau. of Richard & Jane (Maynard) Lewknor, of co. Sussex) p. 157, "Lewknor of Sussex," *Sussex Genealogies,* (Lewis Centre) Comber—1933 p. 194, Vol. X, & p. 59, Vol. XX, *Arc. Cont.* m. (2) Elizabeth Clement (dau. of Sir Richard Clement of the Mote in Ightham. She survived her husband).

Thomas Lovelace appears in list of Kentish Gentry in 1549; Commissioner in 1552; Res., Lovelace Place in 1554; Admitted Gray's Inn, 1541; mentioned in will of his Uncle



William Lovelace (g. 6), (b. 1480); Known as "Lovelace of Eynesham"; of Kingsdown & Hever, co. Kent; He adorned windows of his private chapel at Hever with armoral bearings in colored glass — 5 coats, recording his matches & descendants.

Child. (5) — (g. 8) — all by 2nd wife.

1. Leonard, eldest s. & successor to his father, Thomas Lovelace (7). A wealthy man who lost most of his wealth by being too easy in becoming security for his neighbors. m. Margaret Molineaux, of Nottinghamshire, dau. of John Moleneus of Thorpe & aunt of Sir John Molineux. She m. (2) Thomas Clarke of Hyde Abby, Winchester, p. 74 — *Vis. of Nottingham* — 1569-1614.

2. Elizabeth, "dau. Thomas Lovelace of Kingsdown, Kent." bur. Waldershire (*Faussett Mss.*), m. Sir Edwin Monins of Waldershire, Kent. p. 116—*Vis. of Kent*—1663-1668 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 54 — Monins Arms pictured.

Child. (5) — Monins

a. Eliza

b. Mary

c. Priscilla

d. Frances (from letter to Uncle Richard Lovelace)

e. Sir William (of Waldershire, Kent) m. Jane Twisden of Peckham (dau. of Roger Twisden, m. Anne Wyatt, dau. of Thomas Wyatt, Knight) 1st ch. of Wm. Twisden (of Wye, m. Elizabeth Rayden or Royden, heir of Thomas Royden, Esq. of Great Peckham).

Child. (11) — Monins

3 Edwards & Thomas, who d. in infancy; Elizabeth; Ann; Susan; Frances; Thomas; Jane, m. to Jo Knatchbull (he was s. & heir of Norton Knatchbull, Baronet, m. 2nd Dorothy Westro, dau. of Thomas Westrow, Alderman of London) ch. of Thomas Knatchbull, of Madystone (m. Eleanor Ashley, dau. of John Ashley & sister of Sir John Ashley, Knight), ch. of Richard Knatchbull of Mersham, co. Kent, m. Sugam Green, dau. of Thomas Green of Bobling. p. 116 — "Monins" & p. 92 — "Knatchbull" — *Vis. of Kent* — 1663-8 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 59; John, m. Mary Hamon, dau. of Will Hamon. 2 Monins ch. were Jane & Will.

3. Margaret.

4. Richard, d. before June 12, 1630, when Kingsdown branch of the Lovelace family became extinct in the male line. m. (1) Mary Lovelace (dau. of Wm. Lovelace (g. 7) & Ann Lewis, & gr. dau. Wm. (g. 6) Lovelace (m. Mrs. Alice (Stevens) Sharve). He m. (2) Mrs. Jane (Monke) Day (b. dau. of Francis Mounke & wid. of Roger Day. She was ae. 48 at marriage. bur. 60 yrs. later at Thorington Church, Suffolk, ae. 108 yrs. Her will gives to Richard Coke & codicil to Roger, Robert, Bridget & Jane Coke. She left no ch.). He, Richard (8) was of Colham, near Uxbridge, afterwards succeeded to Hever at Kingsdown, & of Hillingdon & Kingsdown. He inherited estate from brother Leonard. A lawyer & reader at Gray's Inn in 1563. Living in 1621.

Child. (2) — (g. 9) — Both by first wife, Mary Lovelace.

a. Elizabeth, bur. April 12, 1596, St. Alphage, Canterbury.

b. Margaret of Hever, sole heir of Richard of Kingsdown, co. Kent. m. Aug. 24, m. Aug. 27, 1619, Hillingdon, co. Middlesex, rec. in London, Henry Coke of Thorington in Suffolk. From them descended the Earls of Leicester. He was s. of Sir. Edward Coke of Stoke, co. Bucks., Knight & Chief Justice, m. (1) Bridget Paston, dau. of John Paston of co. Norfolk — p. 48 — "Coke of Thorington" — *Vis. of Suffolk* — 1669 — *Har. Soc. Pub.*, Vol. 61.

Child. (5) — (g. 10) — Coke — Mentioned in Coke will of June, 1630.

A. Jane

B. Bridget

C. Robert

D. Richard of Thorington, m. Mary Rous, dau. of Sir John Rous of Henham & had one ch., Robert Coke, b. abt. 1650.

E. Cyriac, of Beckles, co. Suffolk, m. Katherine Gooding (dau. & sole heir of John Gooding of Whetsted in co. Suffolk). 4 Coke ch. were (1) John; (2) Cyriac; (3) Katherine; (4) Henry; s. & heir, b. abt. 1648 as ae. 16 in 1644. p. 61 — "Coke of Beckles" — *Vis. of Suffolk* — 1644 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 61.

5. Thomas of Kilham, co. Bucks. Educated at Eaton. m. Phillis Rooks (dau. of Robert Rooks of Tawley, co. Bucks.) (m. (1) Mary Godsalve, dau. & heir of Thomas Godsalve of Norwick, co. Norfolk), eldest s. & heir of Thos. Rooks (m. Elizabeth, dau. of a minister in Clarke, co. Suffolk), eldest s. & heir of Thomas Rooks, Esq. (m. a dau. of Wm. Stonner, Knight, of Stoner, co. Oxford) eldest s. & heir of Thos. Rooks of Fawley (m. dau. of Fowler of Ricott, co. Oxford), s. of Thos. Rooks of Fawley (m. Margery, dau.

& heir of Thos. Saqueville of Fawley). p. 165 & p. 207, *Vis. of Buckinghamshire* — 1566 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol 58.

Henry Louelace or Lovelace (g. 7), John (6), Wm. (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1), b. abt. 1524, Kingsdown, Freeman of the Mercers Company, 1550, by servitude, having been apprenticed to Mr. Robert Chertsey. Direct ancestor of the Canterbury branch of the Lovelace Family. Inherited "Snatts" in Kingsdown from his father. d. 1577. Will dated Aug. 1 — 1577 in which he describes himself as "Gentleman of Chalke," near Gravesend. Bur. at Kingsdown, near his bros. Thos. & Lancelott. Left Snatts & other lands in Kingsdown, Maplescomb, Woodland & Shoreham to eldest s., Thos. with remainder to next s., Lancelott. m. Margery or Margaret Harmon.

Child. (2) — (g. 8) p. 126 — *Vis. of Kent* — 1619 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 42.

1. Thomas d.s.p. — Pilloried, Feb. 11, 1585, Tower of London, being accused of counterfeiting letters.

2. Lancelott, b. 1563 — Admitted Gray's Inn, 1581. Recorder of co. Canterbury, 1621 to 1628. Of Canterbury & after marriage, of Hollingbourne, d. Dec. 15, 1640, in 78th y. bur. St. Margaret's Church. m. Mrs. Maria or Mary (Cayser or Keysar) Rivers. (bp. Oct. 19, 1568, at Hollingbourne, dau. of William Cayser. She d. Mar. 8, 1630 & was bur. at St. Margaret's. She had been previously married to Richard Rivers by whom she had a son Wm. Rivers to whom she deeded property Nov. 10, 1625.)

Child. (10) — (g. 9) p. 216, vol. X & p. 62, Vol. XX, *Arch. Cont.*

+a. Francis, b. 1594, m. (1) Elizabeth Rogers, m. (2) Anne Rogers.

b. Judith, b. Apr. 25, 1596, m. 1617 at Thorington, John Doughty of Norfolk.

c. Launcelott, b. Apr. 10, 1597.

d. Elizabeth, b. 1599. d. unm. 1627, of St. Mar-

garet's Church. Will at Canterbury leaves something to poor of Hollingbourne. She had property at Bethersden.

e. Maria, b. June 21, 1601, m. Robert Ladd or Lade (s. of Vincent Ladd, Barrister of Gray's Inn. Of Burham. He bur. July 1, 1699, m. Anne Denne, dau. of Thos. Denne of Denhill) ch. of Thos. Ladd (of Barhem, m. Elizabeth Mombrey, dau. of Thomas Mombrey of Sutton in Kent by Dover.) ch. of Thos. Ladd, (of Barhem) ch. of John Ladd, (of Otting, in Elham, co. Kent.) ch. of John Ladd of Otting.) Only ch. was Launcelot Lade. p. 205 — *Vis. of Kent* — 1619.

f. Henry, b. Dec. 2, 1602.

g. Anne, b. Aug. 5, 1604.

h. Margaret, b. Jan. 3, 1605/6, m. as his 2nd wife, Nicholas Chaloner of Chiltington in Sussex. His 1st wife was Grace Bulman, who was bur. June 26, 1626. He was b. Westmeston, bur. 1658, same place s. of Francis Chaloner (mentioned in will of mother-in-law, Maria Keyser in 1638, & wife Jane Keyser, dau. of William Cayser or Kayser.) See ancestry of her sister, Mrs. Maria Cayser Rivers Lovelace*). p. 84 — *Sussex Genealogies* — Combes — 1932.

Child. (8) — Chaloner — b. Westmeston bp. Chiltington. (g. 10.)

A. Mary, bp. Sept. 4, 1628.

B. Francis, bp. May 3, 1630.

C. Jane, bp. Sept. 2, 1632.

D. Margaret, bp. Dec. 1, 1633.

E. Francis again, bp. Aug. 3, 1636.

F. Jane again, bp. Mar. 17, 1638.

G. Thomas, bp. Apr. 9, 1643.

H. Nicholas, b. Dec. 12, 1644.

i. Leonard, bp. Mar 1, 1606/7. Referred to as having been Town Clerk & Coroner in Charter of 1684. d. 1671 & bur. at Harbeldown. m. Sept. 26, 1632, Martha Whiting,

*William Cayser, of Hollingborne, co. Canterbury, m. Elizabeth Chawnte, dau. of John Chownte of Wrotham) ch. of John Cayser, (of East Pecham, m. Margaret, dau. of one of the heirs of Conghurst.), ch. of Wm. Cayser of East Pecham, who m. a dau. of Wyldgose, p. 36 — *Vis. of Kent* — 1574.

dau. of Alderman Whiting. She bur. April 26, 1640, at St. Mary Magdalene's. 3 child. were Lancelot, b. Apr. 7, bp. Apr. 22, 1635; Martha, b. July 9, 1637; Mary, b. June 9, 1639.

j. William, bp. June 19, 1608. Vicar of Ash in 1643. Rector of St. Mary's Burgate in 1660; bur. Aug. 8, 1683, St. Margaret's. m. Susan Philpott, dau. Maria, m. Dudley P. Lovelace, nephew of Gov. Frances Lovelace of N. Y. State. p. 54.

Francis Lovelace (g. 9), Lancelott (8), Henry (7), John (6), Wm. (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). bp. Sept. 22, 1594, Hillingbourne. d. Mar. 1, 1663/4 & bur. at St. Margaret's. m. (1) Elizabeth Rogers, who was bur. May 2, 1661, at St. Margaret's. m. (2) Anne Rogers, dau. of Gouldwell Rogers, of Canterbury. She was bur. there Aug. 28, 1674. She was gr. dau. of Richard Rogers, Dean of Canterbury & Bishop of Suffragan of Dover. p. 217 — Vol. X, *Arch. Cont.*

Francis Lovelace was a lawyer. He succeeded his father as Recorder of Canterbury, 1638-1643. Engaged in the Christmas Riot of 1647. Advisor on the "Kentish Petition." Entertained the King & Queen. A speech of his is preserved in the British Museum. Admitted Gray's Inn, 1609. Francis Lovelace mentioned in the will of Mary Digges, of Chilham Castle, co. Kent., virgin & youngest dau. of Sir Dudley Digges. Will dated May 4, 1643, & proved May 23, 1643. Mary was a sister of Edward Digges, Gov. of Virginia. p. 160, Vol. 23, *Vir. Mag.*

Child. (11 — 10 by 1st wife & 1 by 2nd wife.)

1. Anne, b. May 1, 1632, m. as his 2nd wife, William Kitchell (s. of Thomas Kitchell, of New Inn, London, & clerk of Dover Castle, who m. Deborah Boles of Kent. Living, 1663, in Canterbury), ch. of Thos. Kitchell of Cliffords Inn, London. 2 Kitchell ch. were Francis & Thomas.

2. Margaret, b. July 10, 1633, living in 1712.

1146154

3. Thomas, b. Aug. 25, 1634.

4. Leonard, b. Dec. 29, 1635. Town Clerk. bur. Jan. 4, 1701/2, under pew adjoining Mr. Whitefield's pew.

5. Launcelott.

6. Robert, bp. Apr. 2, 1637, at St. George's.

7. Bingham.

8. Mary.

9. Goldwell, bp. Dec. 6, 1639, bur. Feb. 26, 1711-12, St. George's, Canterbury. m. Alice Hawkes, (bur. Apr. 14, 1717). He was last of the name on record at Canterbury.

10. William, d. before May 26, 1656, when letters of administration were granted to "Judith, relict of Wm. Lovelace of Canterbury," bur. St. Brides, m. Judith Whitefield, (bur. Aug. 17, 1712, St. Margaret's, "under the first stone entering into the chancell." Her will, proved 1712, mentions Goldwell Lovelace & sister Margaret Lovelace.) He was admitted Gray's Inn, 1646.

Child. (3, none of whom survived to carry on the family.) i.e. Francis, d. infancy, May 6, 1655; Wm. "of Canterbury & the Middle Temple," bp. Mar. 30, 1654, d. Aug. 8, 1679, bur. St. Margaret's, ae. 25; Francis, bp. Dec. 3, 1656, d. Mar. 11, 1701/2, bur. St. Margaret's under the 2nd stone from chancel door.

11. Frances, bur. Aug. 31, 1679, "dau. of 2nd wife, Ann Lovelace." p. 92 — *Vis. of Kent* — 1663-1668 — *Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol. 54.

CHAPTER IV — The Bethersden Line

William Lovelace (g. 6), William (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1), b. abt. 1480. Although a 2nd s., he succeeded his uncle, Sir Richard Lovelace as proprietor of the Lovelace Place & was ancestor of the Bethersden line, being 2nd Lovelace of Bethersden. d. 1541. Will dated Dec. 18, 1540, proved Apr. 6, 1541, in Archdeaconry Court of Canterbury, states he desired to be buried in Bethersden Church at a spot to be chosen by Alice, his wife. He names bro. John Lovelace & nephew Thos. Lovelace as supervisors thereof. He left "monies" to each of 3 ch., m. Mrs. Alice (Stevens) Shawe who d. 1541 when all her children were under age as shown by her will dated Mar. 28, 1541, & proved July 28, 1541, Canterbury, in which she mentions bro. Wm. Stevens & s. of 1st hus. John Shawe.

Child. (3 or more) — (g. 7) — *Vir. Mag.*, Vol. 27, p. 393.

1. Elizabeth, living unm. in 1540.

2. Margaret, m. July 13, 1556, at St. George's Canterbury, Austin Cooke. She was a widow in 1576 according to her brother's will.

3. poss. John (Peckham charts give him as the ancestor of the wife of Lord Byron, but other records show this to be erroneous).

4. Sir William, "only son," who inherited all lands upon his attaining the age of 26 yrs. according to his father's will. Elected M.P. for Canterbury in 1558 & returned 3 times thereafter. b. at Lovelace Place prob. betw. 1525 & 1530 as he was a minor in 1541. He was Sergeant at Law. He succeeded his father as proprietor of Lovelace Place &

so ancestor of the Bethersden line. He was also of Lydden Manor, co. Kent. Admitted to Gray's Inn, 1548. Called to the bar in 1551. Became Serg. at Law in 1567 & attained great rank in his profession. Justice of Assizes for Oxfordshire, Feb. 27, 1571, & thereafter. He left a large number of properties in various parts of Kent. High Steward of Liberties of Christ Church — Founder of Hospital of St. Lawrence, which purchase involved his heirs in costly legal proceedings & forced them to sell his properties in St. Stephens to his tenant, Roger Manwood, who, later, as Baron Manwood, instigated legal proceedings against his son & exhorted heavy payments. His name frequently appears in accounts of corporations of Faversham & Canterbury. He was a writer of authority upon wills. Dulwich Gallery, London, contains his portrait in his red robes, painted on a panel 26″ x 22″, & displays Lovelace Arms & motto, "Virtute Duce." He left a large no. of properties in various parts of Kent as indicated by his will which mentions "cosen" Thomas Lovelace of Kingsdowne.

d. Mar. 23, 1577, in London. Will dated July 20, 1576; bur. Apr. 1, 1577, in Canterbury Cathedral with monument inscribed, "William Lovelace and Anne, dau. of Robert Lewis, Alderman of Canterbury." There must have been something remarkable about his death because on May 3, 1577, Henry Benneman of London paid the Stationer's Co. of London for the right to print "The Brief Course of the Accidents of the Death of Mr. Sergeant Lovelace." Leonard Lovelace was a witness of his will.

m. (1) Anne Lewis (dau. of Robert Lewis, Alderman & Mayor of Canterbury, who d. Oct. 28, 1567). She d. & was bur. Feb. 25, 1569, in Canterbury Cathedral. She left no will.

m. (2) abt. 1570, Mary or Margery or Maria (White or Wight) Carrell, dau. of Sir. Thos. White of Hampshire & widow of Thomas Carel or Caryll, of Wormham, co. Sussex.

Her will, dated Jan. 25, 1577/78, proved Apr. 29, 1578, requested burial at South Warmborough, & named previous husband, Thos. Carrel & daus. Frances Carrell & Mabel Lovelace. She was 1st dau. of Sir Thos. White (of Swansboring). m. Agenta or Agnes White, dau. of Robert White of Farnham & gr. dau. of Thomas White of Peruise in co. Southampton. She was sister of John White, Bishop of Winchester, & Sir John White, Mayor of London in 1563/4 & of Aldershot in co. Southampton. Note 2 Johns according to p. 12, *Vis. of Hampshire — Har. Soc. Pub.* Vol 64. "2 sons in same family by same first name are sometimes found in the records of this period." 1st s. of Robert White (of Swanborne, m. Elizabeth Inglefield, dau. of Thos. Inglefield, the elder, knight.) s. of Robert White, (of Southwarmborne, 14 y. old in 9th yr. of reign of Edward IV, (1461-1483), therefore b. abt. 1475, m. Margarett Gaynsford, dau. of John Gainsford), 1st s. of John White (of Swanborne, obseques 1469, m. Alice Hungerford, dau. of Robert, Lord Hungerford.) s. of Robert White (of Yeatley & Farnham & wife, Alice.) p. 83, Vol. 28 — *Vir. Mag.* & p. 48, *Sussex Genealogies.*

Child. (9 — 7 by 1st & 2 by 2nd wife.) (g. 8)

a. Margery, bur. July 6, 1560.

b. Nicholas, bur. Feb. 2, 1561.

c. Richard, bp. Sept. 14, 1560, bur. Sept. 11, 1561, St. Alphage.

+d. William, b. 1561, m. Elizabeth Aucher.

e. Thomas, b. Apr. 12, 1563, bp. Apr. 25, 1563. *Vis. of Kent* — 1574, p. 64, says "2 sons." d. Oct. 23, 1591, bur. Bethersden. He was prob. the Thomas Lovelace who made a pilgrimage to Rome in 1583. He inherited Manor of Monkton, Mayfield, by father's will.

f. Mary, bp. Oct. 8, 1564. Rec'd a legacy of 200 francs — 10 times what her father had left to his sisters —

with her mother's jewels. m. Richard Lovelace, (g. 8), of Kent. s. of Thomas (7) & Elizabeth (Clement) Lovelace. He d. before June 2, 1630.

Child. (2) — (g. 9).

A. Elizabeth, bur. Apr. 12, 1596, St. Alphage, Canterbury.

B. Margaret, m. 1619, Henry Coke.

g. Annie, bp. Dec. 6, 1567, bur. Aug. 20, 1568.

Child. by 2nd wife.

h. Jane, b. abt. 1570, bur. July 29, 1572.

i. Mabel, bp. Aug. 19, 1572, living in 1577 when she received in father's will a legacy of 200 pounds sterling and her mother's jewels. p. 189, vol. X — *Arch. Cont.* & p. 193 which pictures six Lovelace Shields from the windows of Hever Place & Great Chart Church.

Sir William Lovelace (g. 8), (7), (6), (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). b. 1561, bp. Sept. 30, 1561, St. Alphage, Canterbury, Eng. He was of Woolwich & Bethersden in Kent. Proprietor of Lovelace Place in Bethersden, which was his principal residence, but he spent his latter days in Canterbury. Admitted Grey Friars Inn, in 1580. Knighted, at Dublin, Ireland, on order of Queen Elizabeth, June 30, 1599, by Robert, Earl of Sussex & Lord Lieutenant of Ireland, for part he took in supressing the Irish rebellion. Nov. 27, 1604, he was licensed to serve as a member of the Virginia Company of London & incorporater of the 3rd Virginia Charter in 1614. There is a painting of him in the Dulwich Gallery (no. 367 — panel 42″ by 32″) which was seen by compiler in 1927 when she toured Europe.

d. Oct. 11, bur. Oct. 12, 1629, in his 69th y. at "house of the Grey Friars, Bethersden, Canterbury." Will dated Oct. 6, 1629, proved Oct. 19, 1629, in local consistory court at Canterbury, by Ann, widow of Sir Wm. Lovelace the younger. His picturesque old house of the Grey Friars, built partly upon some graceful gothic arches over a stream,

and commanding a striking view of Canterbury Cathedral, was the place of his death.*

m. 1580/1, Elizabeth Aucher (133 gens. from Adam, see his chart which shows her ancestry, b. abt. 1565, dau. of Sir Edward & Mabell (Wrothe) Aucher, & sister of Sir Anthony Aucher, member of Council for the Virginia Co. Her first cousin, Jane Aucher, m. Sir Humphrey Gilbert, half brother of the famous Sir Walter Raleigh (35 generations descended from Charlemagne). The Auchers came into England with Wm. the Conqueror. The name is found in the roll of the Battle of Abby. It was variously written as Le Archer, or Archard. Robert, s. of Fulbert Archer, was tutor to Henry I, & recd. a grant of 7 manors in co. Berks. The elder branch, originally seated at Lizard (where the Aucher Hall still exists) became extinct by the marriage of Jane, dau. of Archard or Archer to James Levelis, time of Henry VI, p. 33, Vol. I, Burke, *Landed Gentry of Great Britain* (1879). Elizabeth above d. & was bur. Dec. 3, 1627 in Canterbury Cathedral. p. 205, Vol. X, *Arch. Cont.* show pictures of Grey Friars. Also p. 88, Vol. 28 — *Vir. Mag.*

Child. (3) — (g. 9)

1. Richard, b. abt. 1581, bp. Jan. 1, 1582, d. in youth, ae. abt. 20, bur. Oct. 24, 1602, in Canterbury Cathedral.

+2. Sir William, b. abt. 1583, bp. Feb. 12, 1583/4, m. abt. 1610, Anne Barne. He is mentioned in his father's will as only son.

3. Mabel, mentioned in father's will as only dau., b. 1584, bp. Dec. 26, 1584/5, St. Alphage, Canterbury.

---

*The substantial part of his personal property he had conveyed by indenture to Richard, Thomas & Wm. Lovelace; which indenture was confirmed in his will. He also mentioned Elizabeth Lovelace as his heir upon her attaining her 18th birthday. These were probably his grandchildren, (ch. of Sir Wm. the younger who had m. Ann Barne & d. shortly before his father). It appears that he must have visited Virginia or more probably his s. Sir William, as on Feb. 12, 1717, Capt. Argall was allowed bills for the transport of 24 persons to Virginia, including Sir William Lovelace, Sir Anthony Aucher & Mabell, Lady Collymore. p. 939, vol. 2 — Brown — *Genesis of the United States.*

Bur. July 7, 1627, Bethersden Church. m. at St. Thomas Apostle, London, Feb. 17, 1603/4, of St. Bride's, London, dau. of Knight of City of Canterbury, to Sir John Collymore, "mercer of St. Thomas Apostle, ae. 29, Knighted at the Tower, Mar. 14, 1604." He was b. abt. 1574, s. of James Collymore, merchant of St. Thomas, & bur. July 30, 1620, Canterbury Cathedral.

Child. (3) — Collymore — p. 158, Vol. XX, *Arc. Con.* & *Marriage Licenses*, London.

a. Robert, bur. Nov. 18, 1611, Canterbury Cathedral.

b. Mabel, only dau., living in 1629, d. unm. at Dr. Harde's House in 1668 & bur. Cant. Cath.

c. James, bp. May 21, 1609, Bethersden — living in 1629.

CHAPTER V — The Ancestors of all American Lovelace-Loveless Families

Sir William Lovelace (g. 9) (132 generations from Adam) (8), (7), (6), (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1). b. abt. 1583, bp. Feb. 12, 1583, St. Alphage, Canterbury. Known as Sir Wm. Lovelace of Woolwich through wife's estate but called Sir Wm. Lovelace the younger in will. In May, 1609, he is referred to as Capt. Wm. Lovelace, member of the Virginia Co. — Knight of Bethersden-Kent, & direct ancestor of the Bethersden line & probably ancestor of all of the name or family who are to be found in America, today. Knighted at Theobald's in Eng. by James I, Sept. 20, 1609. Served in the Low Countries, i.e., the Netherlands. He was a member of Parliament for Canterbury in 1614.

His portrait is in the Dulwich Art Gallery, London (gal. No. 265, panel 25 x 21 inches). A copy thereof is shown on p. 176, *Vir. Mag.*, Vol. 28. This portrait is disappointing as he was said to be strikingly handsome. But an excellent copy of the portrait, in oil, is in the collections of Mr. Walter de C. Poultney of Baltimore, Md. who is prob. a desc. of Ann Sandys & 2nd hus., Edward Poultney.

d. Aug. 12, 1628, fighting for the Dutch Republic against Spain. Killed at the Siege of Groll, Holland, where he had served with Sir Horace Vere. England & Holland, as members of the Protestant Alliance, were then at war with Spain, & Lovelace fell only a few days before the stronghold of the Groll was recaptured by the allies from the Spaniards. He d. abt. a year before the death of his father in 1629, otherwise he would have succeeded as proprietor of Lovelace Place. His will, dated July 15, 1622 was proved Sept. 23, 1628 in Prerogative Court of Canterbury.

m. abt. or before 1610, gr. dau. of an Elizabethan Chief Baron of the Exchequer, Anne Barne(s), b. abt. 1587, youngest ch. of Sir Wm. Barne(s) & Anne Sandys. She was 128 gen. from Adam. See her ancestry & *Ancestrial chart of Gov. Francis Lovelace.*

She was sister of Sir Wm. Barne of Woolwich & niece of George Sandys, poet, & Edwin Sandys, who induced James I to permit the Puritan fathers to settle in America. Her mother was Anne Sandys (b. June 21, 1570), who m. 2nd Edward Poulton (Poultner) (Poultney). Anne (Barne) Lovelace m. (2) Jan. 20, 1630, at Greenwich, Jonathan Brown, Phd. & L.L.D., by whom she had one child. She d. & her will was proved May 22, 1633, p. 79, Vol I, Burke — *Landed Gentry of Great Britain* — 1879. She left her husband guardian of all her children, together with her brother, Miles Barne. "Barne of Scotterley & Dunwich" says Sir Geo. Barne, Knight, was Lord Mayor of London in 1552, his s. & heir, Sir Geo. in 1586. He was succeeded by oldest s. Sir Wm. Barne, Knt. of Woolwich, Kent, who m. Anne, dau. of Dr. Edward Sandys, Archbishop of York. They had 6 sons & a dau. Ann.

Child. (8) — (g. 10) — p. 213, Vol. I, & p. 939, Vol. II, Brown's *Genesis of the United States.* Local parish registers of this period are not in existence so birthdates are only estimated.

+1. Anna (g. 10), b. shortly before 1611, m. 1628, Rev. John Gorsuch.

2. Richard (g. 10), eldest son, b. Dec. 6, 1617, poet & cavalier. b. at Woolwich, Kent (p. 178, Vol. 28 — *Virginia Magazine*). He became proprietor of Lovelace Place, Bethersden. Received M.A. Degree at Gloucester Hall, Oxford in 1636. Known as Sir Richard & Colonel Richard. He wrote several poems which commemorate the memory of his brother, Francis Lovelace. He sold Lovelace Place in 1649 to Richard Hever or Hulse. p. 183, Vol. 28 —*Vir. Mag.* This ended the connection of the Lovelace family with

Bethersden. As a Justice of Kent he presented to the House of Commons the well known Kentish Petition for the restoration of the King. For this, in April of 1642 he was committed to Gatehouse Prison in London where he wrote his most celebrated poem, i.e.

"Stone walls do not a prison make nor iron bars a cage
Minds innocent & quiet take that for an hermitage;
If I have freedom in my love and in my soul am free
Angels alone that soar above enjoy such liberty" etc.

His fame as a poet rests largely upon the above lyric and "To Lucasta, Going to the Wars" which ends with "Yet this inconsistency is such as you too should adore; I could not love thee, dear, so much, loved I not honor more." This poem was written during his service for the Revolutionary Cause & created a rumor that he had been killed at Dunkirk & thereafter his Lucasta married another. He was prominent in the court of Charles First. He d. Apr., 1658, unm. in London, bur. at St. Bride's Church, near the body of his kinsman, Wm. Lovelace of Gray's Inn. He was greatly impoverished by supplying his two brothers, Francis & William with money and arms for the King's cause & furnishing his young brother Dudley "Posthumas" with means for the study of tactics & fortification in Holland. He was also very liberal to needy scholars & musicians & wounded soldiers. Called the handsomest man of his time. There is a rather poor picture of him in the Dulwich Gallery, London.

Hazlitt Edition of Lovelace's Poetical Works. Schewikert, Ingle, Cooper, etc., *Adventures in Eng. Literature* — 1921, pp. 266 & 986, via. Caroline B. Ellis.

3. Thomas (g. 10), bpt. 1619. Referred to in his father's will as "2nd son." Went to Charterhouse School (Sutton's Hospital), London. He was an active Royalist & came to America to escape the Civil War in England. He purchased a farm known as Lovelace Plantation on Staten Island which farm was inherited by his niece Mary (prob. Mary Hayne, dau. of Elizabeth Lovelace and Daniel Hayne),

wife of Ellis Duxbury of the Barbadoes & later of New York. He became very prominent in New York colonial affairs — with his brother Francis, Gov. of N. Y. as member of Governor's Council in 1671; alderman & sheriff of N. Y. City, same yr. Capt. of a Foot Company, Staten Island in 1672, Justice of N. Y. Patented land from the Crown, tract known as "The Globe" in 1674. Sheriff of Richmond, N. Y., 1684/5. When the Dutch captured N. Y., he & his brother Dudley were ordered to leave but Thomas obtained a stay of 6 months. Meanwhile the return of the British made it possible for him to remain on Staten Island. He d. 1689 & was survived by his wife Mary ?. He had one son, William, & probably other children. William was buried with great ceremony at Fort James in 1671. "The elaborate funeral of Mr. Wm. Lovelace in America, 1671," is recorded in the *Ashmolean Papers*, Bodleian Library, Oxford, Eng. Also described on p. 255, *Manor Houses* & *Homes of Long Island* 1928. He had sent for his niece, Mary & her husband Elias Duxberg, from the Barbadoes but he d. before they reached N. Y. They later settled in Richmond Co., N. Y. *N. Y. Gen.* & *Biog. Rec.*, July, 1920.

Among the Egerton Mss. in the British Museum (no. 25531, folio 503) is a letter from Charles I to the Governor of Sutton's Hospital, London, later known as Charterhouse School, apparently written in 1628, endorsed "for one of Sir Wm. Lovelace's Sons" directing that the Lord Bishop of Canterbury bestow a "prize place" upon Thomas Lovelace in recognition of his father's war service.

+4. Col. & Gov. Francis (g. 10), b. 1620, "3rd son," m. Blanche Talbot.

5. Joanna or Joan (g. 10), b. after July 15, 1622 when named in father's will as "child born to me." She was appointed administratrix May 10, 1686 of bro. Dudley's estate & to succeed said Dudley as administratrix of Bro. Francis. (*Prerogative Court of Canterbury — Administration* Acct. Bk. 1686 & fol. 76d) d. & bur. St. Catherine's

Church, near the Tower, with husband & 2 of her daus. She m. Robert Ceasar, s. of William in Herlfordature, who was living in 1686, & was 2nd s. of Sir John Ceasar, Knight & gr. s. of the famous master of the rolls, Sir Julius Ceasar.

Child. (3) — Ceasar (g. 11).

Anne, m. Sir John Poyntz of Iron Acton, Gloucester. She d. June 23, 1739 & was buried in church of St. Catherine near Tower of London.

Julianna, m. Thos. Sage of Butley, Sussex.

Johanna, m. John Rampayne. She d. Dec. 15, 1694, in childbirth. Their uncle, Richard Lovelace wrote *Priss's Second Judgment* of these 3 girls.

6. William (g. 10), b. abt. 1624, named in mother's but not father's will as it was written in 1622. He came to Vir. abt. 1644. He was a professional soldier & had served under his brother Richard at the siege of Carmerthan Castle, Wales, & elsewhere. He is probably the Sir Wm. Lovelace whose will was probated July 23, 1648. No record of his marriage has been found but it is probable that he had the following children & perhaps others, i.e. — a. John (g. 11), b.? (since John Lovelace, Gov. of N. Y., is erroneously called nephew by Gov. Francis Lovelace. But Gov. John Lovelace was really of the Hurley Lovelace line, i.e.—Gov. John (g. 10), Wm. (9), Francis (8), Richard (7), (6), John (5), Richard (4), as above. Hence we conclude Gov. Francis did have a nephew by the name of John.) b. Wm. Lovelace (g. 11) transported to Annapolis, Md., in 1664 Liber 6 (8) folio 294 Md. Records. c. Francis Lovelace (g. 11) of Baltimore Co., Md., who was of the Bethersden line. Some records erroneously confuse him with Gov. Francis. But he was b. 1644. His will is recorded at Baltimore, dated Mar. 3, 1683, & proved May 19, 1684, indicating that he d. in America abt. the same time as Gov. Francis d. in Eng. In this will he bequeaths property to Matthew Wood's youngest dau., Mary Woods; to cousins Ann Jones, David Jones, Miles Gibson, Sarah Gibson & Ann Gibson. To Charles Gorsuch

he gives his soward. All of these appear to be descendants of Alice (Lovelace) Gorsuch. Family records indicate that he had at least one child, i.e., A — Wm. Lovelace (g. 12), who m. a dau. of Beal. & was the father of +John Baptist Lovelace (g. 13), ancestor of an extensive southern family of the name.

7. Elizabeth (g. 10), b. abt. 1626. m. Mar. 23, 1664, Daniel Hayne of Waltington's Parish, Kintbury Eaton, co. Berkshire, s. of Thomas Hayne of Auborne, Wilts. & wife Katherine Gorsuch (sister of Rev. John Gorsuch, who m. Ann Lovelace). Hence he was a nephew of Rev. John & their ch. were double cousins. He was b. abt. 1624 as ae. 37 at time of marriage. Will dated Apr. 3, 1663, proved May 11, 1687.

Child. (8) (g. 11) — Hayne — mentioned in will.

Daniel, b. abt. 1665, to go to Oxford; —John, also to go to Oxford; —Thomas, to be sent to Cambridge to study law at the Inns of the Court; —Ann; —Katherine; —Elizabeth; —Francis and Mary, who m. Prof. Ellis Duxbury.

8. Capt. Dudley (g. 10), b. after Aug. 12, 1627, date of his father's death, as he was known as "posthumas." d. before May 10, 1686, at Newington, Butts, co. Surrey, Eng., when administration of his estate was granted to his sister, Joan Ceasar. Account on his estate mentions "Mary Lovelace the relict, remaining." He was furnished money by bro. Richard to study tactics & fortification in Holland. An ardent royalist. Captain in bro. Richard's regiment under Louis XIV. With Charles II during his exile. In New York in 1670, with bro. Gov. Francis Lovelace. Commissioner to grant lands at Hurley in Ulster Co. One of the officers at Fort James, N. Y., when it capitulated to the Dutch & he was taken away on a Dutch ship to Fayal & sent back to Europe. Owned a plantation on Staten Island adjoining the plantations of his brothers, Francis & Thomas. In 1659 he published a 2nd collection of his bro. Richard's poems as "Lucasta." "Posthumas Poems of Richard Lovelace Esq." — London — 1679. In 1667 he with bro. Francis was to

have been a lieutenant in a regiment to be raised. Dec. 22, 1675, he was placed in control of bro. Francis' property in Eng. He had a dau. who d. unm. & was bur. Mar. 23, 1678, at St. Margaret's, Canterbury. Also prob. a s., Dudley, b. abt. 1643 as ae. 35 at marriage on April 20, 1678, to Mary Lovelace (g. 9), who was b. abt. 1608, dau. of Will Lovelace (g. 8), Henry (7), John (6), Wm. (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1), and Susan Philpott. He prob. had other children.

Col. Families of U.S.A., by Nelson Osgood Rhodes, Vol. VII.

N. Y. Gen. & Biog. Rec., July, 1920.

Colonial Families in the U. S., G. N. McKenzie, Vol. 7, p. 306.

Americans of Royal Descent, Browning — 7th Edition. p. 444.

Virginia Magazine, cols. 17-24-28-29 — "Lovelace Family," "Barne Fam.", "Sandys Fam."

PART II — AMERICAN FAMILIES

CHAPTER I — Some Children of Sir William and Anne Barne Lovelace, or Louelace, of Kent

Ann Lovelace (g. 10), William (9), (8), (7), (6), (5), Richard (4), John (3), (1), (1), b. shortly before 1611, i.e., after Aug. 3, 1610. She inherited holdings in the East India Company from her father. d. 1657, in Virginia, presumably near West River, Maryland, where she & six of her children had settled in 1650, after the death of her husband.

"The numerous connections between the Lovelace Family & various persons prominent in the early settlement of Virginia would seem to be sufficient reason why Ann selected Virginia as the place where her younger children should cast their fortunes. Both political & religious difficulties were at their height in Eng. & her husband, Rector John Gorsuch, an aggressive Loyalist, suffered persecution & death because of his favorable views toward the King." *Vir. Mag.*, p. 327 — *Visitations of London* — 1633-4-5 *Haleian Soc. Pub.*, shows Gorsuch ancestry & Coats of Arms.

m. 1628, Rev. John Gorsuch, D.D. (b. ? s. of Daniel or Dengell & Alice (Hall) Gorsuch). He was rector of Walkern, Kent. In 1633 he was rector of Walkholme, Herefordshire.

Daniel Gorsuch was a London merchant. Alderman's deputy, Bishop Gates Ward, in 1633. His wife, Alice Hall, was the dau. of John Hall of Lind. Daniel was son of Wm. Gorsuch & Alice Hillson, descended out of Lanceshire from Gorsuch or Armschurch.

Child. (11), (g. 11) — Gorsuch. They were double cousins of the ch. of Elizabeth Lovelace & Daniel Hayne,

whose mother was Katherine (Gorsuch) Hayne, sister of Rev. John Gorsuch. From them has descended a considerable line of prominent citizens of Britain & America.

1. Daniel, b. abt. 1629. Letters of administration were issued to him in Eng. June 2, 1652, on estate of his father & referring to him & mother as late of Weston, Va. But he remained in Eng. & was living there in 1662, when he was known to have one child — Ann.

2. John, b. abt. 1630 & prob. d. young.

3. William, b. 1631/2, d. in Eng., m. Oct. 12, 1660, Catherine Morgan. 2 Gorsuch ch. were Daniel & John, whose gr. gr. moth., Alice (Hall) Gorsuch, left him a legacy in 1662.

4. Catherine (Katherine) Ruth, bp. Nov. 26, 1633, Walkern, Kent. She was one of the bros. & sisters for whose transportation land was granted Theo. Hone Feb. 22, 1652, on the Rappahannock, in Va. m. Wm. Whitby or Whittley, of Warwick Co., Va. He was speaker of the Va. House of Burgesses in July of 1653. He had land in Warwick & on Potomac Creek. 2 Gorsuch ch. — Elizabeth & Wm., Jr., were mentioned in the will of gr. gr. moth. Alice (Hall) Gorsuch. Wm., Jr., of Pyanketonk River, Middlesex, d. 1676/7, unm. Will dated July, 1676, & proved July 23, 1677. Wm. Whitby, Sr., d. abt. Oct. 9, 1655.

5. Robert, bp. Nov. 19, 1635, Walkern, came to Va. d. betw. 1714 & 1720, as will dated June 25, 1714 & probated June 14, 1720. It mentions 3 ch., Daniel, Robert & Dorothy & 2nd wife, Johanna, who d. 1728. His first wife had been murdered by Indians Apr. 11, 1661.

6. Richard, bp. Apr. 19, 1637, Walkern. He went to New York State with uncle, Gov. Francis Lovelace. d. intestate. Estate administered Apr. 4, 1677, by his widow, Elizabeth, whom he had married Nov. 12, 1664, & by whom he had 6 Gorsuch ch. She was Elizabeth Roe, dau. of Edward Roe, of Talbot co., Va., who left legacies to these Gorsuch ch. before Sept. 23, 1678.

7. Ann, b. 1639. d. before Sept. 2, 1702, when her 3rd husband remarried. m. (1) abt. 1655, Capt. Thomas Todd, of Toddsbury, Ware Parish, Gloucester Co., Va. He had come from Eng. in 1637. Settled in Baltimore, Bath Co., Md., in 1664. Burgess from Balt. in 1674/5 (b. 1625, d. 1676 on voyage to Eng. & bur. at sea). Will probated May 30, 1677. s. of Robert Todd (b. 1602), of York, Eng. m. (2) Jan. 16, 1678, Capt. David Jones. (Gave his name to Jones Falls.) His plantation was on site of present city of Baltimore, Md. Will dated Feb. 3, 1686, & prob. Feb. 21, 1686/7. m. (3) Capt. John Oldton, who m. 2nd, Sept. 2, 1702, Mary, widow of Francis Watkins. He was owner of a large tract of land on North side of Spring Valley. Will dated May 4, 1709, & prob. June 30, 1709. 11 or more Todd children & prob. other ch. p. 306 — *Colonial Families, etc.*, continues Todd descendants, also Lovelace Coat of Arms. p. 95, *Peckham Gen.* — Todd Chart. Vol. 26, p. 89, Todd ancestry.

8. Elizabeth, bp. May 13, 1641, m. before 1662, Howell Powell, of Corotoman River, Lancaster Co., Vir., & Talbot, Md. 4 Powell ch.

9. Charles, bp. Aug. 25, 1642, m. (1) Sarah Cole, m. (2) Feb. 15, 1690, Ann Hawkins, of West River. Fr. Md. Quaker records. 4 Gorsuch ch.

10. Lovelace, b. abt. 1643, m. (1) Oct. 23, 1679, Rebecca Preston. m. (2) Hannah Walley. 3 Gorsuch ch.

11. Frances, prob. d. unm., but name appeared as "dau. of John" in will of Alice (Hall) Gorsuch, dated 1662.

CHAPTER II — Governor Francis Lovelace of New York State and Some of His Descendants

Col. and Gov. Francis Lovelace (g. 10), Sir William (9), (8), (7), (6), (5), Richard (4), b. abt. 1621. He inherited jointly with brother William lands in Shoulden, Kent. He was a court favorite and page to Charles I, who reigned 1625 to 1649; imprisoned in the Tower of London by Richard Cromwell as an active Stuart partisan, but after the restoration Charles II (who reigned 1660 to 1685), made him Court Attendant for his loyalty to the Tory cause during the Puritan Revolution. He served the Royalist cause in Wales and commanded Caermarthen Castle from June, 1644, until it was captured by Langborne in Oct., 1645.

He came to Virginia in 1650.* In May, 1652, he was sent by Gov. Berkley of Virginia to inform Charles II of the surrender of Virginia to the Parliamentary forces. In 1667 he succeeded Col. Richard Nicholas as Gov. of New York. His task was to bring the Dutch quietly under English authority. He fostered social relations between the Dutch and English settlers; bought land from the Indians; opened the Boston Post Road and established the first mail routes to Boston and Philadelphia. He lived in Newcastle, N. Y., his home standing there until the 19th century. He had visited Long Island in Oliver Cromwell's time, and before becoming Governor of New York had been sheriff of Richmond County and on Staten Island. Apr. 3, 1670, he received a deed of Staten Island from the Indians. (p. 255, *Manor Houses and Homes of Long Island,* 1928.) In 1671 he

*"Francis Lovelace, Gov. of N. Y., was long believed to be identical with the 2nd son of Richard, first Baron Lovelace of Huxley; but recently it has been ascertained that he was really the same Royalist Officer who came to Virginia during the Civil wars in Eng." p. 228, Vol. 17, 1919, *Virginia Magazine.*

her

bought a farm of Anneke Jeno and his heirs, which was confiscated in 1674 by the Duke of York. Jan. 21, 1671, Gov. Lovelace granted 3,000 acres on Cedar Creek, Sussex Co., Delaware, to Richard Perrott. He was absent on business in Long Island when the Dutch fleet anchored Aug. 7, 1673, opposite Staten Island, and Fort James surrendered.

He died May 10, 1683 or 1686, at Woodstock, Oxfordshire, England. Some records say unmarried, because his brother Dudley succeeded to his English estates. But in America he had married secretly, when about 38 yrs. of age, and was later forced or persuaded to leave his wife.

m. 1659, Blanche Talbot. Although her exact birth date and parentage not found, she was probably of the Talbot line shown in *Ancestry of Peter Talbot* and could have been sister of Richard Talbot, of West River, Maryland. In those days of extreme class feeling it is likely she was opposed by the Lovelace family as not being as closely associated with royalty as themselves.

Child.

1. Edward (11), b. abt. 1662. d., killed in battle in 1714. He was a Naval Lieutenant. He had a son, John (12) Lovelace, who came to America in 1715 with his uncle of the same name. They settled in Dutchess Co., N. Y., where the family owned large tracts of land. The 63 acres of the Jumel estate, a portion of which now belongs to Trinity Church, originally belonged to John Lovelace and was deeded by John Lovelace in 1715 to the Trinity Church Corporation. (We have had many inquiries from Lovelace descendants seeking to prove a financial right in this property through inheritance.) Had son, John Lovelace (13), d. 1803, Syracuse, N. Y.

2. John (11), came to America in 1715. He or John (12), above, had a son, Francis Wentworth, who was killed at Ticonderoga.

Another Francis Lovelace (9) (1594-1664), was son of

Launcelot (8), Henry (7), John (6), William (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1).

Sources:

pp. 175-194, Vol. I, July, 1920 — *New York Genealogical Record.*

George S. Lovelace, Atty. at Law, Union National Bank Building, Muskegon, Mich., in 1924.

The Congressional Library has records possessed by President Jefferson which contain much of interest pertaining to Francis Lovelace, including reference to his marriage to Blanche Talbot.

Edward Lovelace (11), Gov. Francis (10), William (9), (8), (7), etc.

He had son, John Lovelace (12).

John Lovelace (g. 12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), William (9), (8), (7), (6), (5), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1); he came to America in 1715.

Family records (George S. Lovelace, of Muskegon, Mich.) show he was father of John Lovelace (g. 13), who d. 1803, Syracuse, N. Y., and various family traditions indicate he was also father of Joshua (g. 13), b. March, 1745, Revolutionary pensioner; George (13), poss. b. abt. 1735 and father of John Lovelace, who m. Rachael Van Hook. He was probably the son who went from New York State to Kentucky and a small hamlet was named after him in that state; Jeremiah Loveless (g. 13), Revolutionary soldier of Johnstown, New York; and Joseph Loveless (g. 13), who was a baker in the Revolutionary War and m. Mary?. We note that all of these who fought with the colonists had changed the spelling of the name to Loveless as result of the political antagonisms of the day.

p. 51, Roberts, *New York in the Revolution.* "George Lovelis & Jeremiah Lovelis, 4th. Reg., The Line," and p. 147, above, Dutchess Co., Militia, 6th Regiment, lists Elisha

and Joshua Loveless, while Albany Co., Militia, 14th Reg. Col. John Knickerbocker, lists Benjamin, Elisha, John and Jeremiah Loveless.

John Lovelace (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), Wm. (9), etc. He d. in 1803 and was bur. at Syracuse, N. Y.

His children were John (14) b. 1760, d. 1835; a daughter who married a Williams, who was one of the captors of Major Andre at the time of the attempted surrender of West Point by Benedict Arnold; George Loveless (14) who m. Rhuma ?.

Rensselaer Co., *New York census of 1800,* mentions Joseph and George Loveless. Albany Co., N. Y., *Census of 1790,* mentions George, John, Jeremiah, and Joseph, Jr.

John Lovelace (14), John (13), (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10). b. 1760, Circa, N. Y. d. 1835 and buried Syracuse, N. Y.

His probable children were George (g. 15), who came to Warren, Ohio, May, 1800, and was father of George Loveless, b. 1802, Warren, Ohio; John (g. 15), m. Eliza Holden. (She was a singer of note.) Her uncle, Oliver Holden, wrote "Coronation" or "All Hail the Power of Jesus' Name." She m. (2) Mr. Hyde and had a son, David Hyde, who for many years was a Baptist preacher at Saratoga, N. Y. They had two children, John H. Loveless (g. 16), of Hadley, Mass. (The first religious meeting of the Reformed Church of Saratoga Co., N. Y., was held in his house about 1825) and Ariel C. Loveless (g. 16), b. 1812, m. Eliza Gray or Grey; —Royal*; —Geoffrey; Stephen (15), b. abt. 1794, m. Miss Matthews; Daniel (15), b. Dec. 11, 1799, m. 1802, Prudence Jenkins.

---

*Royal (g. 15) settled in Chicago and Geoffrey (g. 15) in Wisconsin.
From — Ellery J. Loveless, Escondido, Calif.
Breman Holden Loveless, Youngstown, Ohio.
George S. Lovelace, Muskegon, Mich.

Joshua Loveless (g. 13) (bro. of John, who d. 1803, therefore son of John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc.). b. March 1742/3/5, Rhode Island. U. S. Census 1820.

Enlisted Apr. 4, 1760, age 17, under Capt. Livingston in N. Y. troops. Enlisted Mar. 23, 1781, from town of Conway, Mass., under Capt. Stone, 5th Reg., Col. Rufus Putman, of Mass., until Nov. 20, 1782. Discharged from service Dec. 25, 1783, at West Point, Orange Co., N. Y. Had been resident in Hadley, N. Y. Family consisted in 1820 of self, "aged 75 last March," daughter aged 51, & male grandchild, age 11. Census 1790, Stillwater Town, Albany Co., N. Y. Joshua Loveless, 3m/16, 16/1m, 4 f.

Children (g. 14).

1. Stephen, b. abt. 1763 (?). Substituted in Rev. for father, Joshua, from Nov. 20, 1782, to Dec. 25, 1783.

2. David Loveless, of Braintree Township, Wyoming Co., Penn. b. 1763 or 1765, m. "since the war of 1812" to May Whitney, at Wyoming Co., Pa. d. Fall of 1845 and left widow, Mary Loveless, who d. Spring, 1846. Transferred from N. Y. to Penn. in Revolutionary War. Harry Ada made application for pension July 2, 1857, for Joseph Loveless, minor child of David Loveless, age 19 yrs., b. abt. 1838.

prob. child. (g. 15) Julia, b. 1827; —Elizabeth, b. 1829; —Joseph, b. 1838; —David, Jr.

6th Census of Pensioners — Rev. & Military Service — p. 126, "David Loveless, Brantree, Luzerne Co., Pa., age 77, resided with David Loveless, June, 1840."

From *U. S. Pension Office Record* & *State of N. Y. Report of History 1897* & *Mass. Soldiers* & *Sailors*, p. 1003, Vol. 9 — "David & Joshua Loveless of Conway, Mass."

CHAPTER III — Loveless of Kentucky and Utah

George Loveless (Lovelace) (g. 13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc.

At the time of his son John's marriage to Rachael Van Hook, he resided in Bourbon Co., near Cooper's Run, a small stream that runs through several counties of the Blue Grass region of Ky. Court disposition taken in 1803, "John Dougherty knew Cooper's Run in 1778 when he & a company of men including Samuel Van Hook & George Lovelace camped above Grant's Improvements thereon." From records accumulated by Capitola Van Hook, of Oklahoma City, Okla., in 1943.

A George Lovelace mentioned, p. 112, Vol. II, Ardery — *Ky. Court & Other Records*, in Nov., 1803, Suits of Chancery, Bourbon Co., Ky.

Possibly the Joseph Lovelace (Lovelass) who in 1779 was granted 400 acres of land in Ky., was another s. of above Geo. & bro. of John, who m. Rachael Van Hook.

John Loveless (14), George (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc. b. prob. abt. 1755, New York State. "Came to Ky. abt. the time of Daniel Boone but parted from him during the war of the Blue Licks."** Apr. 29, 1780, he was deeded 400 acres of land at Cooper's Run, Jefferson Co., Ky. m. prob. abt. 1777, Rachael Van Hook (b. abt. 1760, dau. of Samuel and 2nd wife, Mrs. Zoduca (Williams) Van Hook).

Children (8) (g. 15). Order of birth estimated.

+Joseph, b. 1778, m. abt. 1806, Dorothy Rogers.

Nathan, m. in Southern Ohio.

George, visited his bro. William (b. 1786), when John Evans Loveless was four years old.**

+William, b. Mar. 20, 1786, m. Elizabeth ?.

Benj. W., "at one time he lived near John Evans Loveless."**

Mary.**

Rachael, m. Derius Durrom.

+John, "m. a Ky. lady and had children."** Probably he was the John E. Loveless, b. abt. 1808, and m. Sarah Royal.

John E. Loveless (g. 15), John (14), George (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc. b. 1808, Ross Co., Ohio (age 62 in 1870 as shown in Census of that year). m. Sarah Royal of Mason Co., Ky. (b. abt. 1809 as age 61 in 1870).

Children (3) (g. 16).

1. Sylvester, b. abt. 1844, as age 26 in 1870. He probably was the same as the Lysander Loveless, *Civil War Pensioner,* on Roll of Perry Twp., b. July 31, 1844, Perryville, Clinton Co., Ind., d. Dec. 28, 1908, son of John E. & Sarah (Royal) Loveless. m. Jan. 1, 1884, LaFayette, Ind., Sue ?, who d. Oct., 1889, LaFayette, leaving one child, Lura M.

2. Leander, b. abt. 1846, as age 24 in 1870.

3. John F. C., b. abt. 1851, as age 19 in 1870. Prob. he was John Charles Fremont Loveless, b. Jan. 29, 1850, Prairieville, Ind. Shown in *The Northrup-Northrop Genealogy,* 1908c. m. Jan. 2, 1870, May Winifred Northrup (b. Dec. 17, 1850, dau. of Ira Powell Northrup (b. 1805, m. (2), Martha Jane Elsey), 3rd ch. James & Esther (Hollis) Northrup, 5th ch. of Nathan and Sarah (Crawford) Northrup.

**Source, printed article by John Evans Loveless.

"When John Loveless (b. 1807) travelled as a Morman Missionery in Indiana, Ohio, etc., he kept a diary in which he spoke of Uncles John, Wm., Benj. W., and Aunt Rachel, all living in Clarks Hill, Ind." Ann Jones Loveless.

Children. (8) (g. 17).

a. Lulu Bessie, b. Mar. 10, 1871.

b. Sarah Elizabeth, b. Mar 7, 1873.

c. Ione Jane, b. Nov. 29, 1875.

d. Alice Irene, b. Dec. 20, 1878, d. June 18, 1880.

e. John Ira, b. July 30, 1881.

f. Jennie Rose, b. Mar. 26, 1884.

g. George Boyd, b. Dec. 12, 1887.

h. Frederick, b. abt. 1870, as age one month in 1870.

Miscellaneous data from Washington, D.C., besides the above pension and Census records; Wm. T. Loveless, *Pensioner, Harrison Co., Ind.* d. Mar. 9, 1884.

Benjamin Franklin Loveless, b. 1826 in Ohio. Farmer. Age 44 in 1870. d. Spring of 1894. Bur. with wife in Bush Creek Cemetery. m. Hannah Jane Haynes (b. 1827, age 43 in 1870. d. June 14, 1895, Colfax, Clinton Co., Ind.) His exact parentage not proven but prob. a son of Benj. W. (g. 15) —John (g. 14).

Children. (U. S. Census of 1870.) — (5) (prob. g. 16).

1. Albert, b. 1855.

2. Horace Gar, b. 1858.

3. Orsina Fletcher, b. ?-24, 1860, Colfax, & d. there Sept. 7, 1929. m. April 29, ?, Eva Hallowell (b. Oct. 30, 1867, living in 1941, when their dau. Mary, b. Dec. 23, 1890, m. Charles I. Baker and residing in Los Angeles employed Mrs. M. R. Emberson, professional genealogist (res. at The Engstrum, 623 West Fifth St., Los Angeles), to seek her Loveless ancestry.

4. Florence Bell, b. 1862.

5. Hatty May, b. 1865.

William Loveless (g. 15), John (14), m. Rachael Van Hook, George (13), John (g. 12), Edward (g. 11), Gov.

Francis (g. 10), etc. b. Mar. 19, 1786, Ky. Came to Indiana from Ohio sometime after 1849. d. Apr. 8, 1860, age 74. Head stone in Union Cemetery, Clarks Hill, Ind. m. Elizabeth ?, who is supposed to be buried in Old Cemetery, Milford, Ill.

Children (9) (g. 16), b. Ross Co., Ohio — From Clarks Hill Cemetery.

1. John Evans, b. Apr. 20, 1808. m. 1828, Sarah Boyd, of Pickway Co., Ohio. Their eldest son, Edwin, d. in Los Angeles in 1874. In 1886 he (John Evans) wrote a brief story of the Loveless Family which was published in a Clarks Hill, Ind., paper. From this we have quoted as indicated by ** reference and as follows:

"About 1774 the entire family were taken prisoners by the Indians to the upper Sandusky and kept for four years, when the parents were released and went back to Kentucky, the Indians holding two boys, George and John, and two girls. In the War of 1812 my father (Wm., b. 1786) was surrendered to the British by Hull in Canada. As he was sick he was taken to a private house to be cared for, and found he was with a sister. He learned where his other sister lived and his brothers John and George."

2. James.
3. Benjamin.
4. Sallie.
5. Rachael.
6. Mary.
7. Priscilla.
8. Elizabeth.
9. William, b. Apr. 15, 1815, d. June 6, 1876. m. Margaret Kerney.

In 1941 Mrs. Midge M. Weaver, of 4357 Guilford Ave., Indianapolis, Ind., requested data on this family.

They had a son,

a. Edwin V. Loveless (g. 17), b. Nov. 7, 1852, Clarks Hill. d. Dec. 18, 1925, same place. m. 1872, Cath-

erine E. Young (b. Feb. 10, 1854, dau. of W. B. and Charlotte Johnson Young).

Their son was A. Ora L. Loveless (g. 18), b. June 26, 1875, Clarks Hill, Tippecanoe Co., Ind m. Feb. 9, 1897, Danville, Ind., Elizabeth Blanche Switzer (b. Oct. 11, 1878, Wyndot, Ind., dau. of George A. Switzer & Sarah Catherine Wright).

Child. (10) b. Clarks Hill (g. 19).

I. Pauline Ruth, b. Apr. 15, 1901, d. Mar. 19, 1918. m. Glen Lowler.

II. Clarence Switzer, b. July 23, 1903.

III. Helen Hope, b. Oct., 1905. m. Vocle Hudson.

IV. Margaret Elizabeth, b. Nov. 29, 1908. m. Vergil Brown.

V. Paul Edwin, b. Nov. 4, 1911. m. Virginia Richardson.

VI. Kenneth Robert, b. Mar. 23, 1913, d. Aug. 11, 1923.

VII. Catherine Latetia, b. Aug. 5, 1915. m. Edward Lowery.

VIII. Georgia Wright, b. Oct. 8, 1917. m. Vergil Jenkins.

IX. Byron Kuyer, b. Jan 6, 1920.

X. Herbert Ralph, b. Nov. 20, 1923.

For generations Clarks Hill, Indiana has been a center of Loveless Families, all of whom appear to be descendants of John and Rachael (Van Hook) Loveless. Quite recently they had family reunions, yet our persistent inquiries have brought no response except from Ora L. Loveless and his letters gave traditional rather than genealogical information.

July 2, 1824, Samuel T. Loveless, Box 374, Albernathy, Texas, wrote Ora L. Loveless that he had 2 bros. & 2 sisters living, one brother in Alabama and one in Oklahoma. His father was Rev. Benjamin Franklin Loveless, a Baptist Minister, b. in Georgia, removed to Texas, d. abt. "30 yrs. ago"

or 1894. Benj. Franklin had 2 bros. — Abe of Georgia and Jacob who went to California.

Joseph Loveless (g. 15), John (g. 14), George (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc. b. Mar. 3, 1778, Marysville, Ky. d. Ill. m. prob. abt. 1806, Dorothy Rogers (b. Feb. 25, 1781) at East Ky. (Tenn. of that period), d. Oct. 18, 1834 or 8, dau. of Joseph Rogers (b. Ireland) and Katherine Funk, (b. Germany). Supposed to be a relative of the "Rogers Silver Plate" Family.

Child. (8) (g. 16) From Ann Jones Loveless of Payson, Utah, in 1931.

+1. John, b. June 24, 1807, m. three times.

2. Joseph, b. Aug. 1809, in Virginia.

3. Moses, b. Mar. 12, 1812, Missouri.

4. Mary, b. Feb. 27, 1814, Clay Co., Missouri, m. Thomas Brooks.

Child. (7) (g. 17) Brooks

a. James, m. Mahala Meconory. 6 Brooks children.

b. Malinda, m. Benjamin Moore.

c. Ann Bell.

d. Charles Elger.

e. John Loveless.

f. Rachael Loveless.

g. Benjamin Franklin, m. Melvina Moore. Their 4 Brooks children were: Dorothy, Lucinda, Taylor, and Zarracker.

5. Charity, b. Jan. 6, 1816, m. (1) Charles Spring and had 4 Spring ch. i.e.

a. Charles, Jr.

b. Nancy.

c. Sarah Ann, who m. James Baker & had 2 Baker ch. — Victoria & Nancy Jane.

d. Mary, who m. Wm. Hannor & had 2 Hannor sons. She m. (2) Mr. Cox and had dau. Jemima Cox.

6. Elizabeth, b. Aug. 9, 1817, m. Robert Asher.

Child. (10) Asher.

a. Martha Jane, m. Geo. Nickerson.

b. Nancy Elon, m. Alexander Shares.

c. Elizabeth Anna, m. Charles Cole.

d. Matilda Katherine, m. James Jipson.

e. Sarah Louise, m. John Bradford.

f. George Washington, m. Sarah Rine.

g. John R.

h. Mary Rachel.

i. James Mason.

j. Alexander; these 4 d. unmarried.

7. Rachel, b. Aug. 3, 1819.

8. Katherine, b. July 8, 1822, m. Weston Moore. 5 Moore children were:

a. Mary Elizabeth.

b. Katherine Permelia who m. Nathan Yates and had one Yates child.

c. Wm. Preston.

d. James Wesley.

e. Sarah Frances, who all three d. unmarried.

John Loveless (g. 16), Joseph (15) (1787), John (14) (m. Rachael Van Hook), George (13), John (12), Edward (11), etc. b. June 24, 1807, bp. July 7, 1831, Coldrean, Ross Co., O. d. Dec. 6, 1880, Payson, Utah. p. 1011 *Pioneers & Prominent Men of Utah* — 1913. m. (1) Jan. 25, 1826, Perry, Fairfield Co., O., Rachel Mahalah Anderson (b. Aug. 25, 1805, Hampshire Co., Va., d. Oct. 25, 1891, Payson, dau. of James Anderson) (b. July 16, 1782, Eng., m. July 1801, Priscilla ?. Both natives of Vir. Her bro. James Anderson Jr., was a sheriff of the early west & helped capture the Robbins Roost Gang. Source, Autobiography of John Loveless (1807), dated Mar. 3, 1859, which gives extensive record of the persecutions endured by him & the early Mormons for their faith. It cites instances of miraculous healing by faith. Also states that abt. June 1847, when

the group was located at Council Bluffs, the U. S. Govt. demanded & received a battalion of 500 men for service in the Mexican war. Never before had an exclusively religious association been called upon for a battalion of soldiers. During this time those at home suffered persecution by their neighbors as well as extensive destitution & distress.

He m. (2) Sarah Corina Elmer Williams (bp. 1851), and he m. (3) 1867, Mary Pippard Gange (b. July 16, 1832, Eng. d. July 26, 1869, Payson, dau. of Thomas Edward Gange of Norton, Somersetshire, Eng. & Julia A. Pippard). She was half sister of Rebecca Gange, wife of Wm. Duncan Loveless.

Child. (15) (g. 17)

1. Sarah Ellen, b. July 5, 1827, m. Charles White. 2 White ch.

+2. James Washington, b. 1828, m. 3 times.

3. Joseph Jackson, b. June 1, 1831, d. Jan. 22, 1883, Payson. Came to Utah in 1851; a Mormon Elder; Vet. Black Hawk & Echo Canyon wars; farmer. m. June 1, 1862, Sarah Jane Scriggins (b. Aug. 13, 1839, Salem, Mass., d. 1926, dau. Samuel & Ellen (Prentice) Scriggins of Salem).

Child. (9) b. Payson. All supposed to be deceased in 1931 (g. 18).

a. Matilda Jane, b. Aug. 1, 1863, m. Wm. H. Wignalls.

b. Martha Ann, b. Jan. 10, 1866, m. Charles Hawkins.

c. Jedidah, Jr., b. July 24, 1868, d. Mar. 29, 1915, unm.

d. Joseph Henry, b. Dec. 28, 1870, m. Hattie Savage.

e. Rachael Mahalah, b. Apr. 20, 1873, m. (1) Morris Davis, m. (2) Andrew Chump.

f. Raphael Grant, b. June 26, 1875, d. Aug. 11, 1899, unm.

g. John Franklin, b. Sept. 3, 1879, d. ae. 12 yr.

h. Zella or Stella Emeline, b. Feb. 1, 1880, d. Mar. 2, 1883.

i. Sarah Elizabeth, b. Feb. 10, 1883, d. ae. 9 y.

4. Nephi Anderson, b. Sept. 11, 1832, m. Louisa M. Williams. When he was about 3 yrs. old the mob drove his mother into the woods for all night while his father with others of his faith fought to defend their homes.

Child. (12) (g. 8)

a. Althea Louisa, b. May 5, 1856, m. Adolphus D. Webb, ch. Mabel Webb, b. 1875.

b. Laura Ellen, b. Sept. 16, 1863.

c. Janette, b. Apr. 1, 1866.

d. Alphonzo A., b. June 12, 1868.

e. Hittie Adeline, b. Dec. 18, 1871.

f. Sarah Victoria, b. Sept. 18, 1874.

g. Kate, b. June 26, 1875.

h. Ruth Maud, b. Oct. 26, 1877.

i. Capitola, b. Nov. 6, 1879.

j. Mabel, b. Jan. 24, 1881.

k. Myrtle Ivy, b. Jan. 10, 1883.

l. Louie, b. Dec. 19, 1885.

5. John Thomas, b. Mar. 18, 1835, d. young.

6. Mary Elizabeth, b. Aug. 1, 1837, Lafayette Co., Mo. In fall of 1838 the mob expelled her father's family and other Mormons fr. Missouri & compelled them by force of arms to sign over all their property. m. Lucius Elmer. 10 Elmer ch. were

a. Lucius A., b. Sept. 3, 1855.

b. Lucinda Rachel, b. Sept. 17, 1858.

c. George W., b. Nov. 1, 1860.

d. Joseph A., b. Aug. 31, 1862.

e. Hyman, b. June 12, 1866.

f. John David, b. May 26, 1869.

g. James W., b. Sept. 8, 1871.

h. Etta Jane, b. Apr. 5, 1874, m. Mr. Nesbitt.

i. Ruth Ann, b. Jan. 12, 1876.

j. Lillie May, b. Mar. 15, 1878.

+7. Parley Pratt, b. 1839, m. twice.

8. Rachel Priscilla, b. Feb. 15, 1841, Adams Co., Ill., m. David Wilson.

Child. (14) Wilson (g. 18)

a. David Jr., b. 1857, d. 1885.

b. John Carlton, b. Feb. 21, 1859.

c. Elmira, b. Jan. 17, 1861.

d. Mary Jane, b. Sept. 12, 1862, m. John Done.

e. Mahala E., b. June 30, 1864.

f. Hyrum, b. Aug. 26, 1866, m. Lydia Harper. 4 Wilson ch. were: i. Clayborn, m. Aug. 20, 1928, Emma Kinder; ii. Carroll, m. April 22, 1914, Aurinella Degraw & had 8 Wilson children; iii. Orris, b. Oct. 12, 1890, m. Dec. 20, 1916, Dora Potter and had 3 Wilson children; iv. Effie, b. May 3, 1905, m. June 12, 1926, Weston Clyde Bean and had son Rex Clyde Bean, b. Oct. 27, 1928.

g. Rose, b. Sept. 20, 1868, m. Frank Finnlayson.

h. James Edward Loveless, b. Aug. 24, 1870, unm. in 1935.

i. Guy Wilson, b. Feb. 6, 1872, d. Feb. 15, 1872.

j. Effie May, b. May 27, 1873.

k. George Whitford, b. Aug. 21, 1875, d. Jan. 3, 1885.

l. Clarence LeRoy, b. Dec. 15, 1877, m. Feb. 2, 1915, Nellie Carson (b. Sept. 12, 1882), and had 5 Wilson children.

m. Lulu Ann, b. Jan. 22, 1879, d. Apr. 22, 1886.

n. Melvin, b. Aug. 23, 1882, m. Aurora Nebeker (dau. of Ammon & Mary Adeline (Dixon) Nebeker). 2 Wilson children.

+9. Wm. Duncan, b. 1843, Rebecca Gaines.

+10. Hyrum Smith, b. 1845, m. Eliza Jane Wimmer.

11. John Oscar, b. Aug. 30, 1848.

12. Scharlotte Lucretia, b. Dec. 15, 1850.

+13. Martin Elmer, b. 1855, 1879, Lovina Dummick.

+14. Justin Anderson, b. 1867, m. twice.

15. Jedidah, b. July 20, 1869, d. Aug. 10, 1869.

James Washington Loveless (g. 17), John (16) (1807), Joseph (15) (1787), John (14), George (13) etc., b. Dec. 23, 1828, on his father's farm in Fairfield Co., Ohio. He was a bishop of the 2nd Ward Mormon Church of Provo for 28 yrs. He obviously followed the customs of the Church in that day & practiced Polygamy as he had three wives at about the same time. He d. May 7, 1889, Provo.

m. (1) Mar. 9, 1847, Council Bluffs, Iowa, Matilda Elizabeth McClellan (b. Dec. 15, 1829, d. Mar. 1, 1909, dau. of James & Cynthia (Stewart) McClellan).

m. (2) 1855, Mary Britton (b. Aug. 30, 1840, Birmingham, Eng., d. Jan. 18, 1924, dau. of Richard & Elizabeth (Lee) Britton).

m. (3) Josephine Caldwell (b. July 16, 1842, Stark Co., Ill., d. Jan. 12, 1926).

Child (9 by 1st wife, Matilda McClellan) (g. 18)

Jane Caroline, b. Mar. 25, 1848, m. Newell Knight.

Cynthia Angeline, b. July 14, 1850, m. Samuel Bailey.

+Sarah Louise, b. 1855, m. 1875, Thos. Jenkins.

Desert Matilda, b. Oct. 19, 1858, m. "Dock" Gray.

Juliet Elizabeth, b. Mar. 7, 1861, m. Abraham Conover.

Harriet Una, b. Apr. 29, 1865, m. Horace Beebe.

Valerte Alice, b. June 2, 1867, m. John W. Farer.

+Joseph Wilbur, b. 1870, m. 1896, Mary Johnson.

Hylette Maud, b. Dec. 14, 1874, d. ae. 8 y.

Child. (18) by 2nd wife, Mary Britton (g. 18)

Mahalah Elizabeth, b. Apr. 25, 1858, d. Nov. 10, 1864.

John Jasper, b. Sept. 15, 1859, d. 1919, unm.

Mary Ellen, b. Feb. 14, 1861, d. 1932, m. Mr. Homer.

+David Henry, b. Nov. 9, 1862, m. twice.

George Albert, b. June 20, 1864, d. Mar. 6, 1887, unm.

Barbara, b. Mar. 28, 1866, m. Mr. Hoover.

Urrice Amelia, b. Jan. 19, 1868.

+Alfred Alexander, b. 1870, m. 1892, Rametta Ann Davis.

Sarah Vermia, b. 1871, d. 1925, m. Mr. Cluff.

Emma & Emily, twins, b. Oct. 18, 1872, d. same day.

Thomas Ephraim, b. Jan. 5, 1874, d. Feb. 16, 1874.

Clara Ann, b. Aug. 15, 1875, d. 1925, unm.

Martha, b. Jan. 2, 1877, d. Mar. 18, 1877.

Lily Pearl, b. Apr. 14, 1879, m. Feb. 25, 1896, Claude Hathenbrick.

Ida Matilda, b. May 13, 1881, m. Jan. 14, 1903, Don Carlos Gee.

Myrtle Zina, b. May 1, 1883, m. Mr. Carter.

Chloe, b. Apr. 17, 1885, d. Mar. 16, 1895.

Child. (8) by 3rd wife, Josephine Caldwell. All b. Provo, Utah (g. 18).

Marie, b. 1861, m. Wm. F. Jones.

Charles Madison, b. Mar. 29, 1864, d. Feb. 7, 1882.

Rachel Arminta, b. June 4, 1866, d. Oct. 2, 1899, m. Leslie Symes.

Jedidah William, b. Apr. 21, 1869, d. Apr. 7, 1890, unm.

Franklin Ezra, b. Mar. 7, 1874, m. 1901, Florence Birkin, res. 5147 LaVista Court, Hollywood, Calif., in 1937, when she contributed data.

Electa Janette, b. Aug. 22, 1871, m. Caleb Haws. res. 42 W. 3rd St., N. Provo.

Effie, b. Sept. 1, 1879, d. Oct. 21, 1906, m. Ernest Martin.

Emma, b. May 11, 1882, m. Frank Dyer Beere Gay. res. 569 6th St., Provo.

Sarah Louise Loveless (g. 18), James Washington (17) (1828), John (16) (1807), Joseph (15) (1787), John (14) etc., b. Aug. 12, 1855, Provo, Utah, re. 1936 — McCammon, Idaho, m. Mar. 9, 1875 Thomas Jenkins (b. July 28, 1847, Leckwith, Glamorganshire, Wales. s. Wm. & Mary (Hopkins) Jenkins. He d. July 26, 1915 at Pocatello, Ida).

Child. (9) (g. 19) Jenkins b. Utah & Idaho.

1. Margaret Matilda, b. May 1, 1876, Provo, Utah, res. 1936 — Pocatello, Bannock Co., Utah, m. June 2, 1897, Pocatello, Ida. Thomas Melancthon Edwards (b. Nov. 27, 1864, Elk Pt., S. Dak., d. Aug. 24, 1921, Salt Lake City, s. of Abraham Lawrence & Mary T. (Hoyte) Edwards).

Child. (4) (g. 20) — Edwards

a. Lucile Elizabeth, b. 1898, m. Jan. 7, 1920, Ivan Blaine Gasser. 4 Gasser ch.

b. Thomas Walter, b. Aug. 20, 1900, m. Sept. 25, 1921, Constantie Thatcher Nibley (dau. of Alex. & Constance (Thatcher) Nibley. 2 Edwards ch.

c. Melancthon Jenkins, m. Frances Fuller.

d. Margaret Ruth, b. July 11, 1910.

2. Anna Pearl, b. Dec. 25, 1878, Oneida, Ida., res. 1936 — 5460 Bond St., Oakland, Calif. m. June 18, 1900, Samuel Stewart Ferguson (b. Oct. 30, 1875, Mansfield, O., s. of Lycurgus Alvin & Margaret (Glasgow) Ferguson).

Child. (4) (g. 20) — Ferguson b. Pocatello, Ida.

a. Sarah Alene Maurine, b. Oct. 5, 1903, res. 1119 N. Olive, Santa Ana, Calif.; on Jan. 29, 1936 she visited my home & contributed data on desc. of Sarah Louise Loveless. m. June 18, 1924, Pocatello, Frank Leland Andrews (b. Sept. 10, 1900, Racoon, Pa., s. of Frank Leeper & Nancy Jeanette (Asdale) Andrews). ch. Salley Maurine Andrews, b. July 15, 1927.

b. Samuel Jenkins, b. Mar. 3, 1908, m. Sept. 12, 1933, Ann Ora Fishburn.

c. Katherine Elizabeth, b. July 10, 1910.

d. Thomas Stewart, b. May 21, 1915.

3. Thomas Ray, b. May 25, 1881, res. Pocatello, m. (1) June 6, 1908, Louisa Jenkins. They were not related. m. (2) Aug. 16, 1923, Harriet Pond.

Child. 4 Jenkins (g. 20)

a. Florence Elizabeth, b. Mar. 24, 1909, m. Ralph Young.

b. Thomas Ray, Jr., b. July 16, 1912.

c. Mary Catherine, b. May 31, 1925.

d. Caroline Pond, b. June 2, 1928.

4. James, b. 1885, d. Nov. 3, 1890.

5. Caroline May, b. May 19, 1886, m. Samuel D. Clinton.

6. Ida Elizabeth, b. Aug. 27, 1889, m. Feb. 25, 1914, Paul Victor Nash.

7. Catherine Edith, b. May 7, 1893, d. June 1, 1908.

8. Harry Loveless, b. Mar. 3, 1897, m. Genevieve ?.

9. Howard McClellen, b. 1899, m. Belva Breiner, 2 Jenkins ch.

Joseph Wilbur Lovelace (Loveless) (g. 18), James Washington (g. 17) (1828), John (g. 16) (1807), etc. b. May 24, 1870, Provo, Utah. He was 18 yrs. fire chief of Provo & previously policeman & city marshal.

m. 1896, Provo, Mary Johnson.

Child. (3), b. Provo (g. 19)

1. Joseph Max, b. Jan. 22, 1897, res. May 26, 1935, when he contributed this data, 36 Daisy Ave., Floral Park, Long Island. Had res. in N. Y. since discharged from service in 1919.* Atty at Law, 63 Wall St., N. Y. City in 1933.

m. Sept. 29, 1922, N. Y. City, Elizabeth O'Neill (b.

*He states that John Loveless who m. Rachael Van Hook, came from New York State.

Mar. 17, 1890, Castlemane Co., Kerry, Ireland, dau. of Charles & Catherine (O'Neill) O'Neill).

Child. (2) (g. 20)

a. James Russell, b. Dec. 17, 1925, N. Y. City.

b. William Johnson, b. June 8, 1932, Floral Park.

2. James Washington, b. Dec. 19, 1899, d. Dec. 28, 1922, Provo.

3. Kent, O., b. & d. infancy.

David Henry Loveless (g. 18), James Washington (g. 17) (1828), John (g. 16) (1807), etc., b. Nov. 9, 1862, Provo, Utah, m. (1) Emily Peay. Their one ch. d at birth & bur. with mother. m (2) Oct. 27, 1896, Annie Gertrude Smith (b. May 28, 1860, dau. of ? & Halina Smith of N. Y.).

Child. (2) b. Provo.

1. Edith Leuella, b. Oct. 26, 1897, res. Silverado, Calif., Box 10C, in 1937, when she contributed data. m. Apr. 16, 1914, Martin Joseph Armstrong (b. May 16, 1890, Los Angeles, Calif.).

Child (1) Vernon Martin Armstrong, b. Dec. 16, 1915, m. Oct. 2, 1936, Villa Park, Calif., Hazel May Morrow, b. Mar. 26, 1916, dau. of Charles Wm. Morrow (b. Apr. 10, 1885, Villa Park) & Mable Caroline Stritheit (b. Mar. 9, 1888).

2. Carl Edwin, b. Sept. 15, 1904, m. Apr. 19, 1927, Sybil Workman (b. Mar. 19, 1905, dau. of Dea. Ovitt Workman (b. Feb. 17, 1882, Farmington, Utah, d. Sept. 10, 1927) & Rose Snyder who was b. Sept. 23, 1883).

Child. (2) b. Park City, Utah.

a. Carl Edwin Deen, b. Dec. 21, 1928.

b. David Henry George, b. July 26, 1933.

Alfred Alexander Loveless (g. 18), James Wash. (g. 17) (1828), John (g. 16) (1807), etc., b. Aug. 29, 1870, m. Aug. 6, 1892, Rametta Ann Davis (b. Nov. 18, 1872, Moiri,

Utah, dau. of Joshua Martin & Sarah Jane (Colward) Davis).

Child. (4)

1. Sarah Maud, b. Jan. 2, 1894, m. Sept. 28, 1914, Matts Leo Madson (b. Jan. 5, 1891, d. Mar. 28, 1932, s. of Matts & Bessie (Anderson) Madson).

Child. (4) Madson

a. Machsens, b. Apr. 11, 1916.

b. Richard, b. June 25, 1917.

c. Kenneth, b. Jan. 21, 1921.

d. Bruce Barton, b. Aug. 21, 1927.

2. Mary Ila, b. June 17, 1895, res. 1138 N. Provo, Utah, in 1937, when she contributed the following data. m. Mar. 3, 1915, Joseph Virl Martin (b. June 13, 1893, s. of Joseph Anthony & Anna Anderson (Gronemann) Martin). He is a well known musician playing piano, pipe organ, violin, accordion & cornet.

Child. (1) Ila Geneal Martin, b. Sept. 8, 1923.

3. Leah, b. May 12, 1900, m. Feb. 21, 1918, Albert Edward Montgomery (b. May 16, 1884, s. of Wm. & Carrie Viola (?) Montgomery). ch. Margaret Ruth Montgomery, b. Dec. 6, 1920.

4. Alfred Davis, b. Apr. 19, 1908, m. July 16, 1929, Martha La Fay Parker (b. Nov. 24, 1909, dau. of Ernest Mitchell & Edna Myrtle (Moyle) Parker).

Child. (2)

a. Don James, b. Mar. 22, 1931.

b. Jeanne, b. Nov. 5, 1933.

Maria Adrena Loveless (g. 18), James Wash. (g. 17) (1828), John (1807), Joseph (1787), b. Oct. 25, 1861, Provo, d. Mar. 17, 1906. m. Wm. Thomas Jones.

Child. (7) Jones (g. 19)

1. Eliza Mary, b. Apr. 29, 1882, d. 1930, unm.

2. Thomas William, b. June 8, 1885, d. Mar. 18, 1925.

3. Stella, b. July 24, 1887, d. Mar. 1, 1889.

4. Charles, b. 1890, res. Provo.

5. Myrl, b. Feb. 9, 1892, res. Burly, Idaho.

6. Leona, b. Feb. 28, 1896, m. Oct. 15, 1917, Marshall Henrie. 3 Henrie ch.

7. Gladys Jane, b. Apr. 23, 1903.

Parley Pratt Loveless (g. 17); John (g. 16) (1807), Joseph (g. 15) (1787), John (g. 14), b. Sept. 1, 1839, Adams Co., Ill., where his father's family had settled Mar. 1839. d. Mar. 30, 1886, Payson, Utah, m. (1) Apr. 29, 1860, Martha Ann Perry (b. Dec. 21, 1843, Joseph City, Hancock Co., Ill., d. Jan 25, 1878, dau. of Orin Alonzo Perry). m. (2) Jan. 24, 1870, Eliza Ann Cloward (b. Oct. 12, 1854, Payson, d. Sept. 14, 1927, Payson, dau. of Thomas & Mary (Page) Cloward).

Child. (9 by 1st wife & 7 by 2nd wife) b. Payson (g. 18)

1. Parley Oscar, b. Sept. 18, 1861, d. Mar. 2, 1940, m. Mar. ?, 1885, Helen Adelia Webb.

2. John Perry, b. Oct. 16, 1863, d. Mar. 27, 1940, m. Oct. 18, 1883, Salt Lake City, Alodia Marcell (Marshall) Scovill (b. Aug. 1, 1864, Mt. Pleasant, Utah, dau. of Lucius Nelson Scovill & 4th wife, Sarah (Libba) McArthur. She was the 17th of 28 ch. in this family; living in 1913 in Springfield, Utah).

Child. (7), b. Payson (g. 19)

a. Martha Alice, b. May 20, 1884, m. Oct. 12, 1904, Frank Schierer (b. Dec. 25, 1883, s. of Jacob & Mary Schierer).

Child. (8) Schierer (g. 20)

A. Ethel Fay, b. July 15, 1905, m. Dec. 24, 1932, Ed. Holmes, (s. of Edward & Mary Holmes) 2 Holmes ch. were Kent b. Jan. 2, 1935 & Jean, b. Mar. 1, 1936.

B. Crystal, b. May 11, 1907, m. May 25, 1931, LeRoy Johnson. ch. Kay Johnson, b. May 25, 1938.

C. Dean, b. Mar. 9, 1910, m. Nov. 1, 1928, Madge McMullen, s. of R. W. McMullen.

D. Ned, b. Apr. 7, 1914.

E. Paul, b. July 4, 1917.

F. Niles, b. May 2, 1919.

G. Shirley Pearl, b. Jan. 2, 1922.

H. June, b. Nov. 19, 1924.

b. Lulu, b. Apr. 4, 1887, m. Nov. 20, 1909, Frank Nahum Curtis. 5 Curtis ch. (g. 20) were:

A. Reed F., b. Nov. 12, 1910.

B. Donald L., b. Sept. 5, 1912.

C. Owen Keith, b. Nov. 4, 1914.

D. Geraldine, b. Nov. 13, 1925.

E. Dale, b. Sept. 6, 1928.

c. Clara Marcell, b. Mar. 11, 1889, m. Feb. 10, 1909, Robert L. Bills. 5 Bills ch. (g. 20) were:

A. Howard S., b. Aug. 19, 1913.

B. Ray L., b. Apr. 18, 1918.

C. Robert D., b. May 2, 1921.

D. Alice Margaret, b. Mar. 31, 1925.

E. Glenna L., b. June 18, 1927.

d. Lupreal, b. Feb. 16, 1891, d. Oct. 7, 1907.

e. Owen Perry, b. Mar. 25, 1894, res. 1931 — 591 E. 5th, N. Payson, Utah. m. Sept. 15, 1915, Virginia Harriman, dau. of Frank & Mabel (Harper) Harriman. 6 ch. (g. 20) b. Payson are:

A. John Perry Jr., b. Apr. 12, 1916, m. Aug. ?, 1938, Anna Dale Evans.

B. Blaine Harriman, b. Aug. 15, 1918.

C. Gene Francis, b. Feb. 12, 1920.

D. Kenneth Owen, b. Jan. 19, 1925.

E. Dan Rayner, b. July 7, 1930.

F. Mabel, b. Mar. 28, 1935.

f. Alline, b. Nov. 8, 1891, d. Nov. 5, 1896.

g. John, b. July 23, 1899, d. same day.

3. Louisa Jane, b. Jan. 11, 1865, d. Aug. 17, 1865.

4. Annie May, b. July 21, 1867, d. Feb. 5, 1905, m. James Henry Webb.

5. Emma Sirilda, b. Jan. 31, 1869, d. Sept. 19, 1884.

6. Mary Marinda, b. Mar. 19, 1872, d. Apr. 25, 1921, m. Feb. 12, 1889, Geo. W. Austin.

7. Roseline, b. Mar. 12, 1874, d. same day.

8. Martha Jane, b. July 5, 1875, res. 1931 — Payson, Utah, m. (1) Oct. 30, 1900, Payson, Darius Wilbur Haymore (b. Mar. 6, 1876, d. Mar. 13, 1903, ch. of Franklin D. & Adeline (Taylor) Haymore), m. (2) June 3, 1915, John Monroe Manwell (b. June 19, 1860, d. Jan. 6, 1930). One Haymore ch., i.e. Kenneth, b. Aug. 1, 1902, m. Mar. 26, 1927 Anona Viola Sanders (b. Dec. 9, 1904, dau. of Thos. & Rachel Rebecca (Richus) Sanders). 3 Haymore ch.

9. Chloe Ann, b. Nov. 12, 1877, m. May 18, 1898, Geo. Franklin Tilson (b. Jan. 26, 1868, Tilson's Mill, Bland Co., V., d. July 25, 1929, Payson. s of Harmon H. & Mary Jane (Groseclose) Tilson).

Child. (6) Tilson Fr. *Tilson Gen. & Family Rec.*

a. Grace Lucile, b. June 18, 1899, m. June 6, 1917, Raymond Joseph Monsen (b. Sept. 16, 1889, s. of Joseph & Annetta Elizabeth (Nelson) Monson). 3 Monsen ch.

b. Madaline, b. July 17, 1902.

c. Reha, b. 1904, d. at birth.

d. Evelyn Virginia, b. Oct. 22, 1907, m. Lawrence Davis. 2 Davis ch.

e. Geo. Kermit, b. May 5, 1909.

f. Theron Perry, b. Jan. 26, 1913.

Child. (7) by 2nd wife (g. 18)

1. Millie Ann, b. Feb. 1, 1871, m. Leonard Searles.

2. Mary Maretta, b. Feb. 10, 1874.

3. Geo. Albert, b. May 27, 1876.

4. Eva Elizabeth, b. June 10, 1878, m. (1), Aug. 20, 1897, Wm. Edison McBeth (b. Dec. 26, 1879, d. Apr. 30, 1926), m. (2), June 19, 1928, Hyrum Burtram Phelps.

Child. (7) McBeth (g. 19)

a. Edison Leland, b. Feb. 3, 1898, m. 1925, Leora Reece.

b. Wm. Gordon, b. July 21, 1900, m. 1916, Lola Davis.

c. Blanche, b. Mar. 8, 1904, m. May 7, 1925, Ray Hausen, 2 Hausen ch.

d. Ned, b. Mar. 8, 1908.

e. Carol Jack, b. Apr. 1, 1911, m. July 23, 1929, Rowena (Searls) Pype. 2 McBeth ch.

f. Paul Maurice, b. Feb. 4, 1915.

g. Barbara, b. Aug. 17, 1918.

5. Juliette, b. July 23, 1880, m. 1900, Frank McBeth. 5 McBeth ch.

6. Leo Samuel, b. Oct. 30, 1882, m. Nov. 25, 1907, Jennie Mac Miles (b. Oct. 8, 1885, d. Dec. 8, 1940, dau. of Isaac & Martha Jane (Perry) Mac Miles).

Child. (5) b. Payson (g. 19)

a. Edith Marie, b. July 1, 1909, m. Aug. 7, 1929, Harold P. Oderman (b. May 19, 1910, s. of Peter A. & Anne (Northgrade) Oderman). 2 Oderman ch.

b. Sherman Lee, b. Sept. 7, 1911, m. Sept. 12, 1935, Marion Patten (b. July 23, 1914, dau. of Vivian Henry & Ruth Hanna (Bona) Patten). 2 ch.

c. Edith Mae, b. Nov. 10, 1916, m. 1937, Jack Ludlow.

d. Raymond Miles, b. Dec. 1, 1918, m. Apr. 28, 1941, Eleanor Hamilton.

e. Mary Janice, b. Sept. 9, 1922.

7. James Raymon, b. Dec. 8, 1884, d. Mar. 12, 1888.

From p. 361, 453-4, *Scovils & Scovills in Eng. & Amer.* 1915. p. 303, *Annals & Recollections of Oneida Co., N. Y.*

Wm. Duncan Loveless (g. 17), John (16) (1807), Joseph (15) (1787), John (14), George (g. 13), etc. b. Jan. 7, 1843, Hancock, Ill., where his father had settled in

the Spring of 1842 and bought a farm 6 miles east. He d. June 23, 1925.

m. Nov. 15, 1872, Rebecca Gaines or Gange (b. Dec. 25, 1852, d. July 18, 1895), dau. of Thos. Edward (d. Nov. 25, 1883, Salt Lake City) and Anna (Powell) Gange. She was half sister of Mary Pippard Gange, 3rd wife of John Loveless (g. 16) (1807).

Child. (9) (g. 18) b. Payson, Utah.

+Charles Gilbert, b. Sept. 17, 1873, m. Oct. 13, 1895, E. J. Curtis.*

+Wm. Duncan Jr., b. Apr. 2, 1875, m. P. R. Cunningham.

Thomas Edman, b. Dec. 20, 1876, m. Apr. 24, 1898, Sarah Olive Curtis.*

Daisy Ann, b. Sept. 2, 1879, d. Sept. 24, 1879.

Mary Lillian, b. May 11, 1882, m. Samuel Averson. 4 Averson child., b. Salt Lake City, were: Rebecca Irene; Ruth; Samuel Paul; Wm. Robert.

Ruth Agnes, b. Sept. 21, 1885, d. Nov. 26, 1906, m. Audry Campbell. Their one ch. was Mary Audry Campbell.

John Lester, b. May 12, 1888.

Hyram Vernon, b. 1890, m. Eva ?.

Elmer Justin, b. Nov. 9, 1892, m. Frances Johnson.

Charles Gilbert Loveless (g. 18), Wm. Duncan (g. 17) (1843), John (g. 16) (1807), etc., b. Sept. 17, 1873, Payson, Utah. m. Oct. 13, 1895, Payson, Utah, Emma Jane Curtis (b. Nov. 12, 1879, dau. of Samuel Thomas and Sarah Olive (Butler) Curtis). Her sister, Sarah Olive Curtis, married his bro. Thos. Edman Loveless.

Children (9), b. Payson, Utah & other places in that state (g. 19)

1. Curtis Gilbert, b. July 28, 1900, res. (1935) Box 534, Salmon City, Idaho, when he contributed this data, and requested additional information. (He heard of me through

*They were sisters.

Frank Lovelace of Bozeman, Mont.) m. June 30, 1920, Salt Lake City, Rosa Elizabeth Hale (b. Jan. 4, 1899, Perry, Idaho, dau. Franklin G. & Cora Elizabeth (Hammond) Hale).

Child. (7)

a. Rosa Ruth, b. May 1, 1921, Sterling, Idaho.

b. Wayne LaMar, b. Nov. 13, 1924.

c. George Kaye, b. Sept. 7, 1926, Twin Falls.

d. LaVonne, b. Aug. 1, 1928, Salmon City.

e. Charles Eugene, b. Mar. 15, 1930.

f. Glenna, b. Dec. 11, 1931.

g. Naomi, May 1, 1934.

2. Wm. Kenneth, b. Dec. 2, 1902, Salem, Utah, d. Dec. 10, 1934, Burley, Casia Co., Idaho, m. Jan. 10, 1929, Lucy Tilly (b. Oct. 30, 1902, Spanish Fork, Utah).

Child. (3), b. Burley, Casia Co., Idaho.

a. Louise, b. Dec. 16, 1929.

b. Harold, b. Mar. 29, 1931.

c. Elden, b. May 4, 1932.

3. Zelda Ruth, b. Sept. 21, 1905, Payson. m. July 23, 1923, Herman Christensen.

4. Ora Olive, b. Sept. 15, 1906, Payson, m. Elery Thomas.

5. George Arthur, b. June 16, 1909, Payson.

6. Thomas Edman, b. June 29, 1911, Blackfoot Utah, m. Maxine Ashby.

Ch. — Leona Rae, b. Sept. 25, 1933, Burley, Ida.

7. Emma Pearl, b. Sept. 19, 1916, Blackfoot.

8. Iva Maria, b. Mar. 21, 1920, Sterling, Utah.

9. Estella Lenore, b. Jan. 3, 1924, Sterling, Utah.

Wm. Duncan Loveless, Jr. (g. 18), Wm. Duncan (g. 17) (1843), John (g. 16) (1807), b. Apr. 2, 1875, Payson, Utah. m. Pearl Rebecca Cunningham, (b. Aug. 2, ?, American Fork, Utah, d. Dec. 13, 1935), dau. of George Cunningham (b. Aug. 17, 1840, Dysart, Scotland. d. Mar. 15, 1913,

m. Mary Wrigley who was b. Apr. 7, 1842, Dorchester, Eng.) s. of James Cunningham (b. 1800, Boreland, Scotland, d. May 29, 1893, m. Elizabeth Nicholson who was b. 1805, Fifeshire, Scotland, d. 1890), s. of Robert Cunningham (who espoused the cause of Charles the Pretender abt. 1784, m. Katherine Currie).

Mary Wrigley (b. 1842, d. Feb. 27, 1930), dau. of Thos. Wrigley (b. Feb. 22, 1816, Barnby, York Co., Eng., d. July 3, 1873, m. Grace Mary Wilkins who was b. Sept. 24, 1818, Lincoln, Eng., d. May 30, 1906, dau. of John Anthony Wilkins, b. Lincoln City, Eng., m. Dec. 16, 1816, Agnes Elizabeth Allen). In 1940 an extensive Wrigley record was nearly completed for the Gen. Archives of the Salt Lake City Library.

Child. (2) (g. 19), b. American Fork, Utah.

1. Wm. Duncan 3rd, b. July 4, 1908, res. (1939) — 273 Wilson Ave., Salt Lake City, m. June 19, 1934, Salt Lake City, Sadie Abelone Petersen (b. Apr. 30, 1911 at Hunter, Salt Lake Co., Utah). (See her ancestry.) Her sister is Mrs. Charlotte P. Kent who contributed these records.

Child. (2) (g. 20), b. Salt Lake City.

a. Wm. Duncan 4th, b. June 1, 1935.

b. Ronald Hans, b. Aug. 6, 1937.

2. Bessie Marie, b. Oct. 15, 1912, m. Sept. 5, 1935, Orrin Willard Spainhower (b. Aug. 25, 1909).

Child. (2), Spainhower, b. Salt Lake City.

a. Rebecca Ann, b. Mar. 29, 1937.

b. Orrin Willard, Jr., b. Aug. 29, 1838.

Ancestry of Sadie Abelone Petersen (b. Apr. 30, 1911, m. June 19, 1934, Wm. Duncan Loveless 3rd. ch. of Hans Marcus Petersen, b. Oct. 8, 1879, Narreby, Odense, Denmark, res. (1939) 5504 W. 35th St., Salt Lake City, m. June 19, 1907, Annie Bengtena Nielsen).+

ch. of Christien Petersen, b. July 16, 1856, Ostrup, Odense, Denmark. A home owner and mender of wooden

shoes, d. Apr. 14, 1921, Granger, Utah. Came to United States in 1890, joined Mormon Church. m. (1), 1879, Abelone Jorgensen+ and he m. (2) Maude Viola Blunt.

ch. of

Niels Petersen, b. June 17, 1828, Ostrup, d. Mar. 25, 1916, same place. m. (1) Margurite Christiansen (b. Jan. 4, 1831, Oster Hasinge, Odense, dau. of Christian Weir), (b. 1800, Hanover, Germany, d. 1854, Denmark) & his wife Engelge (b. 1800). He m. (2) Maren Anderson ch. of Peter Andersen (Danish change), a farmer and blacksmith, b. July 11, 1799, Ostrup, d. Oct. 6, 1867, Denmark, m. Mar. 17, 1822, Sarah Kirstine Augusteen.+

ch. of

Anders Hansen, b. Feb. 26, 1758, Ostrup, d. Nov. 30, 1821, m. July 16, 1784, Volberg Nielsen (b. Feb. 6, 1752, dau. of Niels Isaaksen & Marie Andersen. She d. Nov. 20, 1821).

ch. of

Hans Pedersen, of Hyadstrup, Odense, Denmark, b. abt. 1725 m. abt. 1750 Johanna Nielsen who d. Aug. 29, 1799.

Annie Bengtena Nielsen, b. Apr. 23, 1884, Hunter, Salt Lake Co., Utah, m. June 19, 1907, Hans Marcus Petersen.

ch. of

Rasmus Nielsen, b. June 24, 1842, Sporing Randers, Den., d. Aug. 3, 1919, Hunter, Ut., m. Dec. 7, 1874 Anna Charlotte Johnson.+

ch. of

Niels Rasmussen Haugarrd, b. May 8, 1798, Randers, Den., d. Apr. 23, 1842, Den. m. Karen Sorensen.+

ch. of

Rasmus Larsen, b. Mar. 11, 1742, m. July 18, 1776, Ane Christensen.+

ch. of

Lara Rasmussen, b. abt. 1711, Hallendrup, Randers,

Den., m. Kirsten Christensen (b. abt. 1713).

ch. of

Rasmus, b. abt. 1675, m. abt. 1700, Mrs. Rasmus (b. abt. 1671, of Brenstrup, Den).

Abelone Jorgensen, b. Feb. 22, 1854, Morre Hojrup, Odense, Den., d. Dec. 24, 1887, Den. m. 1879 Christian Petersen.+

ch. of

Jorgen Larsen, b. June 15, 1827, Morre Hojrup, d. 1879, m. Nov. 8, 1856 Karen Marie Larsen.+

ch. of

Lara Hansen, b. abt. 1799, Hjadstrup, Odense, d. Apr. 23, 1859, m. Ana Jorgensen.+

ch. of

Hans Larsen, b. abt. 1744, bur. Aug. 28, 1788, m. Maren Laursen (b. abt. 1754, Hjadstrup, d. Apr. 4, 1807, ch. of Laura), (b. 1732 & wife (b. abt. 1736).

Sarah Kirstine Augusteen, b. Jan. 13, 1792, Hojby, Odense, d. May 23, 1860, Den. m. Peter Andersen.

ch. of

August Mathiasen, bp. Nov. 21, 1762, Odense, d. June 12, 1834, same place. m. Aug. 14, 1791 Karen Christiansen (b. 1762, d. Feb. 3, 1811, Den).

ch. of

Mathias Augustsen, m. Sarah Ejlarsen (b. abt. 1735, Den).

Anna Charlotte Johnson, b. Mar. 15, 1855, Ausby, Sweden, d. Dec. 9, 1926, Hunter, Ut. m. Dec. 7, 1874 Rasmus Nielsen.+

ch. of

Johan Johnson, b. June 19, 1829, Ausby, d. May 20, 1856, m. Anna Stina Petersen.+

ch. of

Johannes Jonsson, b. July 24, 1774, Vimmersrum,

Sweden, d. Mar. 20, 1853, Ausby, m. Aug. 6, 1829, Maja Ingesson.

ch. of

Jonas (John) Nilson, b. Nov. 26, 1732, Vimmersrum, d. May 6, 1794, Ausby. m. Oct. 23, 1763, Naja Larsson (b. Sept. 29, 1742, d. Sept. 4, 1836).

Karen Sorensen, b. Mar. 30, 1810, Grundfor Randers, Den. m. Niels Rasmussen Haugarrd.

ch. of

Soren Pedersen Winther, b. 1781, Sporring, Den. d. Feb. 10, 1848, Den. m. Apr. 20, 1804 Anne Christensen.

ch. of

Peder Sorensen Winther, b. abt. 1739, Sporring, m. abt. 1780 Anne Marie Larsen (b. abt. 1739).

Ane Christensen, b ?, m. July 18, 1776 Rasmus Larsen.+

ch. of

Christen Christensen, b. 1728, Hvallose, Den. d. Sept. 9, 1764, Den. m. June 19, 1750 Maren Sorensen (b. abt. 1730, Strobdrup, Den.).

ch. of

Christen Christensen, b. 1690, Allstrup, Den. d. Apr. 29, 1760, m. Maren Christensen (b. 1703, d. Mar. 13, 1764).

Karen Marie Larsen, b. Aug. 19, 1834, Norre Bojrup, Odense, d. abt. 1909, m. Nov. 8, 1856 Jorgen Larsen.+

ch. of

Lara Hansen, b. Dec. 11, 1796, Norre Bejrup, d. Apr. 11, 1850, m. July 24, 1829, Abelone Hansen.+

ch. of

Hans Hansen, b. abt. 1750, bur. Mar. 4, 1808, m. Feb. 14, 1785, Karen Larsen (b. abt. 1755, d. May 6, 1819, ch. of Lara) (b. abt. 1727).

Ana Jorgensen, b. Nov. 10, 1799 Soendersoe, Den., d. July 2, 1875, m. Lara Hansen.

ch. of

Jorgen Larsen, b. abt. 1756, Soendersoe, d. Jan. 16, 1819, m. Dec. 16, 1796, Sidsel Hansen b. abt. 1764, Soendersoe, d. Dec. 15, 1840, dau. of Hans (b. abt. 1736).

Anna Stina Peterson, b. Mar. 2, 1835, Torpa, Sweden, d. Dec. 8, 1894, Murray, Ut. m. Johan Johnson.+

ch. of

Peter Mangnes Petersen, b. June 17, 1812, Lund, Sweden, d. 1895, m. Anna Liza Larsson.+

Maja Ingessen, b. Mar. 8, 1795, Barmap, Sweden, d. Oct. 9, 1868, Ausby, Sw. m. Aug. 6, 1829, Johannes Jonsson.+

ch. of

Inge Borjesson, b. Oct. 29, 1763, Njeuvehult, Sw. d. Dec. 10, 1843, Norra Vi, Sw. m. Catherina Isaksson.+

ch. of

Borje Ingesson, b. Sept. 1, 1715, Ronnas, Sw., d. May 20, 1795, Norra Vi. m. Oct. 15, 1738, Maria Bugersson.+

Anne Christensen, b. Aug. 8, 1773, Lobdrup, Den., d. Feb. 13, 1841, same place. m. Apr. 20, 1804, Soren Pedersen Winther.+

ch. of

Chriatian Nielsen Littrup, b. Mar. 5, 1738, Nielstrup, Den., d. Nov. 6, 1808. m. Aug. 20, 1767, Karen Rasmussen, (b. 1752, Robdrup, Olst, Den., d. Apr. 14, 1832).

ch. of

Niels Christensen, b. 1700, Rondas, Den. d. Mar. 13, 1742, m. Kirsten Pedersen (b. abt. 1705).

Abelone Hansen, b. Jan. 26, 1808, Norre Hojrup, Den., d ?. m. July 24, 1829, Lara Hansen.+

ch. of

Hans Hansen, b. abt. 1762, Kinte, Odesse, d. Jan. 9, 1840. m. Apr. 26, 1805, Maren Hellensen, (bp. Jan. 23,

1782, Hjadstrup, Den., she d. Apr. 12, 1843. ch. of Helen Olsen b. abt. 1742, d. July 22, 1827. m. Anne Rasmussen (b. abt. 1746, d. Mar. 3, 1824).

Anna Liza Larsson, b. Apr. 14, 1807, Sterhagen, Sw. m. Peter Magnes Petersen.+

ch. of

Lars Jonsson Flan (decorated name given him by King of Sw.), b. Aug. 14, 1777, Holmaskegen, Sw. d. April 16, 1858, m. Oct. 23, 1804, Liza Gustafsson (b. abt. 1776, Horn, Sw., d. Nov. 16, 1852).

ch. of

Jons Larson, b. Jan. 24, 1754, Holmaskegen, Sw., d. 1837, Jarvas, Sw. m. Oct. 20, 1776, Segrid Eriksson (b. Jan. 22, 1748, Yegestrop, Sw. d. Dec. 22, 1797).

ch. of

Lars Andersson Dahlgreen, b. Nov. 8, 1698, d. July 2, 1766. m. Oct. 26, 1752, Maria (Jacobsson) (Jonsson), b. abt. 1718, d. Sept. 12, 1791.

Catharina Isakasson, b. May 3, 1773, Sdentorpet, Sw. m. Inge Berjessen.+

ch. of

Isaac Nilsson, b. Mar. 3, 1736, Hult, Sw., d. Jan. 4, 1813, Sund, Sw. m. Dec. 22, 1760, Catherine Hakansson.+

ch. of

Nils Nilsson Hultman, b. Jan. 14, 1693, Hult, d. Oct. 28, 1775. m. Maria Samuelsson (b. abt. 1706, d. Apr. 4, 1749, dau. of Samuel Tyrsson) (b. 1672, d. Nov. 28, 1769, in Sw.).

Nils Jonsson, b. 1651, Alarp, Sw. d. Mar. 11, 1735.

Maria Bugersson, b. Feb. 3, 1722, Njervehult, d. May 2, 1778, Norra Vi, Sw. m. Oct. 15, 1738, Berje Ingessen.+

ch. of

Berge Jonsson, b. Mar 23, 1673, Njervehult, d. May 4,

1737. m. June 13, 1701, Ingebort Staffansson (b. 1687, d. Oct. 21, 1754, Norra Vi).

Catherine Hakansson, b. Nov. 28, 1739, Blasebo, Sw., d. Sept. 1, 1813, Sund, Sw. m. Dec. 22, 1760, Isaac Nilsson.+

ch. of

Hakan Anderson, b. Dec. 11, 1707, Tullerum, Sw. d. Apr. 6, 1796. m. June 1, 1735, Maria Karlsson.+

Maria Karlsson, b. Sept. 26, 1715, Gallebo, Sw. d. Feb. 7, 1791, Norra Vi, Sw. m. June 1, 1735, Hakan Anderson.+

ch. of

Carl Olofsson, b. 1681, d. Dec. 18, 1743. m. Ingeborg Larsson (b. May 31, 1692, d. Jan. 27, 1778, dau. of Lars Jonsson) (b. 1656, d. Nov. 6, 1716).

ch. of

Oloff Michelsson, b. 1644, d. Dec. 27, 1715, Norra Vi. m. Sigrid Elfsson.

Contributed by Mrs. Charlotte Peterson Kent, home add., 5504 W. 35th, So., Salt Lake City. Interviewed Sept. 22, 1939, in our Library.

Hyrum Smith Loveless, John (1707), Joseph (1787). b. May 16, 1845, Quincy, Hancock Co., Ill. On Sept. 9th of that year the Mormon group was pillaged & burned out by the mob and his family fled to Nauvo. d. Feb. 6, 1907, Provo, Utah.

m. as her 2nd husband, Eliza Jane Wimmer (b. Jan. 25, 1841, Mt. Hope, Adams Co., Ill. d. Jan. 28, 1922, Salt Lake City, dau. of Robert Wimmer (b. Dec. 11, 1805, Penn. Captain of his own Co. & came to Utah in 1852. Member of Payson Quorum Sentries. d. 1893. m. Mar. 21, 1831, Lucretia Wilkerson, b. 1807), 2nd ch. of Peter Wimmer (Weimer) (b. Apr. 17, 1782, near New Brunswick, N. J., d. Jan. 11, 1864, Springville, Utah, m. Elizabeth Shirley, who was b. June 11, 1785, near Slippery Rock, Pa., d. Aug. 31, 1862,

Springville, Utah. dau. of Robert & Susan Sherley). ch. of Jacob & Jemima (Petrie) Wimmer).

Lucretia Wilkerson (b. Nov. 2, 1807, Richmond, Madison Co., Ky. d. July 29, 1869, Payson, Utah) was ch. of David Wilkerson (b. 1768, Vig. & Elizabeth King, who was b. Va. & d. Oct. 1, 1830, Warren Co., O., who was ch. of Wm. Wilkerson, b. 1745 in Va.).

Child. (8) — b. Payson, Utah.

1. Emma Jane, b. Jan. 12, 1871. d. June 14, 1877.
2. Emmer Jean, b. twin, d. 1920, Castle Dale, Utah. m. Jan. 23, 1887, Albert Arlington Day — 9 Day children.
3. Hyrum Smith, Jr., b. Dec. 5, 1872, m. Susan Jane Wakefield. res. Salt Lake City, where they have 9 ch.
4. Charles White, b. Mar. 9, 1875, d. June 20, 1877.
5. Thomas Ginnings, b. Jan. 29, 1877, d. ae. 16 y.

+6. Eliza Viola, b. 1879, m. 1898, M. P. Johnson.

7. Rachael Mahala, b. Sept. 10, 1882, res. 1940 — 5419 So. 4th Ave., Los Angeles. m. Oct. 9, 1907, Brigham Nielson (b. May 30, 1880, Huntington, Utah. ch. of Jens Nielson, who was b. Denmark & m. Dorthea Karen).

Child. (5) — Nielson, b. Huntington, Emery Co., Utah.

a. Wendell, b. Nov. 29, 1908, m. June 22, 1936, Elizabeth Slater Hazard. 2 ch.

b. Birdie Lee, b. Apr. 16, 1910, m. Sept. 8, 1935, James A. Vendevere.

c. Gene, b. July 16, 1911.

d. Lucile, b. June 14, 1913, m. Thanksgiving Day, 1932, Ray Hayden. res. Honolulu, Ha. Is.

e. Dorothy May, b. Feb. 6, 1919.

8. Sarah Victoria, b. Sept. 18, 1884.

Eliza Viola Loveless, Hyrum Smith (1845), John (1807), Joseph (1787). b. July 23, 1879, Payson, Utah. res. 1935 — 450 N. Sweetzer, Los Angeles, Calif. & 1946, 1059 S. Manhattan Pl., L. A. m. Oct. 14, 1898, Huntington, Utah, Miles Partridge Johnson (b. Mar. 28, 1875, Fountain

Green, Sampete Co., Utah. d. Dec. 25, 1929, Los Angeles, ch. of Miles Edgar Johnson) (b. July 31, 1851, in Nebr., in covered wagon enroute to the west. d. Aug. 25, 1933. Mormon High Priest; State Senator; Postmaster for 20 yrs. m. Aug. 25, 1887, Mona, Utah, Alice Malena Wilkins+), ch. of Geo. Washington Johnson (b. Feb. 19, 1823, Chautauqua Co., N. Y., d. Jan. 22, 1900, Naob, Grand Co., Utah. m. Maria Jane Johnston), ch. of Ezekiel Johnson, of Uxbridge, Mass. (m. Julia Hills). Alice Malena Wilkins was dau. of Alexander Wilkins (b. July 9, 1835, N. Y., d. May 23, 1903, m. Alice Malena Barney, b. 1835), ch. of John Ganaworth Wilkins, Mormon High Priest (b. July 18, 1802, Bath Canada, N. Y., d. Jan. 8, 1890, Saratoga, N. Y., m. 1830, Nancy Kennedy, who was b. 1810 & d. 1893), ch. of Edward S. Wilkins (b. 1780, m. Jane McCray). Alice M. Barney, b. May 25, 1835, ch. Edson Barney (b. June 30, 1806, d. Feb. 4, 1905, m. Jan. 1, 1831, Lillie Ballon), dau. of Royal Barney.

Child. (6) — Johnson.

1. Alice Malena, b. July 9, 1899. She & mother called at my home in 1935. m. June 6, 1916, Jacques Held (b. May 28, 1895, s. of Jake & Frances (Bolto) Held).

Child. (4) — Held, b. Utah & L. A.

a. Alice Deon, b. 1917, m. 1939, Orville Rolfus.

b. Donald Miles, b. 1922.

c. Keith Johnson, b. Aug. 13, 1923.

d. Carrol Robbin.

2. Forde Loveless, b. Mar. 5, 1901, m. Mar. 3, 1924, Mollie Irene Porter.

3. Pauline, b. July 23, 1904, m. 1921, Le Roy Stark.

4. Kenlon Loveless, b. 1908, m. 1935, Mrs. Elizabeth (Wood) Chapman.

5. Leah Rae, b. 1912, m. 1935, Mark Bell Ross.

6. Helen Kathleen, b. 1918, m. 1939, John Orson Reeve.

Martin Elmer Loveless, John (1807), Joseph (1787). b. June 30, 1855, Jordan, Salt Lake Co., Utah. d. Feb. 28, 1937, m. Mar. 31, 1879, Mary Lovina Dummick (b. Oct. 22, 1863, Spanish Fork. d. Oct. 29, 1931, dau. of Albert David & Eliza Jane (Wimmer) Dummick).

Child. (14) — b. Payson.

1. Lucretia, b. Oct. 28, 1880, d. Jan. 31, 1881.

2. Rosa Alba, b. May 14, 1882, m. Mar. 6, 1898, Wm. Hill Searls (b. 1879, s. of Corland & Maria Josephine (Hill) Searls).

Child. (10) — Searls.

a. Mildred Ione, b. 1899, m. 1918, Joseph Arnold Bingham. 3 Bingham ch.

b. Nina May, b. 1901, m. 1920, Arthur Ellis Westover. 5 Westover ch.

c. Lee Hill, b. 1904, m. 1924, Rachel McLisken.

d. Louise Lovina, b. 1906, m. 1926, Emil Suter.

e. Zenola Fay, b. 1909, m. 1928, Franz Suter.

f. Rex Delos, b. 1911.

g. Kenneth Brice, b. 1913.

h. Erma Aleen, b. 1915.

i. Max Loveless, b. 1918.

j. Bell W., b. 1921.

3. Major, b. July 8, 1884, m. 1901, Lillian Ballard (1883, dau. of James S. & Isabella (Race) Ballard).

Child. (3) — b. Payson.

a. Verna May, b. 1902, m. Wilfred Johnson. 2 Johnson ch.

b. Ralph F., b. 1904, m. 1927, Deline Sargent.

c. Grace, b. 1915, m. Max Kaye. 2 Kaye ch.

4. Delos, b. 1885, d. 1908, unm.

5. Albert Lee, b. 1886, d. 1890.

6. Meldora, b. 1887, m. 1905, Geo. Albert Ballard. 3 Ballard ch.

7. Cora, b. 1890, d. 1890.

8. Martin Hill, b. 1891, m. 1920, Theressa Richardson. 5 ch.

9. Thomas Brice, b. 1893, d. 1911.

10. Vaughn Tillman, b. 1895, m. 1915, Laurel Dimmick. 8 ch.

11. Elmer Dimmick, b. 1898, m. Jennie Terry. 3 ch.

12. Elwood, b. 1900, m. 1918, Grace Barnett. 3 ch.

13. Bert Anderson, b. 1903, m. Artis Johnson.

14. Madge, b. 1905, d. 1907.

Justin Anderson Loveless, John (1807), Joseph (1787). b. Dec. 18, 1867, Payson, Utah. d. Jan. 2, 1941, m. (1) Apr. 17, 1890, Alice Stark (b. Feb. 14, 1870, d. Oct. 30, 1898, dau. Daniel & Elizabeth (Baldwin) Stark). m. (2) Sept. 5, 1900, Eliza Ann Jones, contributor of this & much other Loveless data & purchaser of Lovelace Charts to Adam (b. Nov. 17, 1878, dau. of Joseph Smith & Alice (Court) Jones).

Child. (6) — 2 by 1st wife & 4 by 2nd wife.

1. Mary Leah, b. Mar. 22, 1891, unm. in 1931.

2. Edna Kate, b. July 27, 1893, d. Jan. 23, 1923, unm.

3. Glenn Le Roi, b. Aug. 8, 1901, m. (1) Dec. 19, 1924, Edythe Marie Flowers (b. Oct. 13, 1901, Westmoreland, Pa., dau. of Michael & Amanda (Lehman) Flowers). m. (2) May 14, 1935, Veda Law (b. Nov. 10, 1903, dau. of David Emanuel & Electa Pearl (Merchant) Law).

Child. (3).

a. Carol Ann, b. Jan. 17, 1929, Long Beach, Calif.

b. Judith Ann, b. Aug. 13, 1938, Payson, Utah.

c. Janice Loraine, b. Mar. 7, 1941.

4. Wayne Justin, b. May 26, 1905, m. Sept. 19, 1925, Madeline Wilson (b. Aug. 12, 1905, dau. of Sanford & Caroline (Collett) Wilson).

Child. (1) — Rae Ann, b. July 6, 1933.

5. Willis, b. May 4, 1907, m. Nov. 19, 1930, Louise Jones (b. Apr. 15, 1908, dau. of Reginald & Jane (Johnson) Jones).

Ch. (1) — Lynn Justin, b. Aug. 19, 1931, Salt Lake City.

6. Aleen, b. Jan. 20, 1912, d. at birth.

CHAPTER IV — Jeremiah, Joseph and George Loveless of New York State

Jeremiah Loveless (g. 13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc. b. New York State. Probably he was the Jeremiah who appears in the Albany, New York, Census of 1790. Family tradition says that he left his wife and children near Johnstown, New York, and went west, where he was reported to have married again and had a family of children whose names were very similar to his New York State family.

Child. (5) (g. 14), b. in New York State, by 1st wife.

+1. Daniel, m. Ann Parish.

+2. Solomon, b. 1799, m. Harriet Agusta Thompson.

3. Ransom, b. Johnstown, N. Y. Residence Butler & Wolcott, N. Y. d. abt. 1865, m. Mary Hodges.

Child. (9 or more) (g. 15).

a. Ransom Jr. His grandchildren were: (A) Hamilton (killed in Civil War); (B) Elnathan (poss. of West Butler, N. Y., m. Mary Ida Lowell); (C) Marie; (D) Washington, of Wolcott, N. Y.; (E) Abraham; (F) Augusta; (G) Mary, of Wolcott, in 1926; (H) Seward, of Wolcott (had children Maggie, Clayton, Fanny, Bettie, Harvey, Ross and Hazel — all living Nov. 16, 1926, when he wrote data).

b. Columbus.

c. Solomon, m. Mary Nelson Tillo. Their 2 ch. were: (A) Myrta, m. Horace Grant — no ch.; & (B) Harlow A., b. 1846, Butler, N. Y., d. before Apr. 30, 1921, when his obituary appeared in a Syracuse, N. Y., paper. He m. Anna Augusta Couch. Their 5 ch. were: (I) Eva B., m. (1) Fred Barclay, m. (2) Le Roy Edwards — no ch. by either marriage; (II) C. Stella, b. 1882, d. 1888; (III) Mary A., m. Arthur Lampman — 2 Lampman ch. are Doris & Evelyn;

(IV) Bessie M., m. Milton Bush — no ch.; (V) Harlow S. G. Loveless, m. 1876, m. 1903, Jennie A. Reed. On Aug. 18, 1927, when he sent this data, he was Superintendent of Schools, Phelps, Ontario Co., N. Y. His 4 ch. are: Margaret E., b. 1904, d. 1908; Harlow Reed, b. 1907; Mary Alice, b. 1909; John Enos, b. 1913.

d. Bird.
e. Crandall.
f. Josiah.
g. James.
h. Mary.
i. Hiram.

4. Crandall.
5. Betsy.

Daniel Loveless (g. 14), Jeremiah (g. 13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc.

He was one of the first settlers in Onondaga Co., N. Y., A carpenter who built many of the houses and barns in the neighborhood. d. age 67 yrs. m. Ann Parish, dau. of David Parish.

Child. (9)

1. Peter, b. abt. 1832/4. d. abt. 1900/2, age 68. m. Frances Stevens.

Child. (9)

a. Fred, m. (1) Stene Billing, and had 1 dau. m. (2) Nellie Butler, no ch.

b. Charles Peter, b. Jan. 7, 1862, d. Apr. 8, 1917, m. Apr. 2, 1884, Mary Group. (Gave this data in 1917.)

Child. (9) b. near Baldwinsville, N. Y.

A. Elmer, b. Aug. 17, 1885, m. Jennie Uzette. 1 ch., Elmer Loveless, Jr.

B. Estella Dora, b. Nov. 5, 1886, m. Apr. 11, 1907, Harry Elliot Thorne — no ch.

C. Harley James, b. Mar. 12, 1888, m. Dec. 24, 1919, Anna Smith.

D. Blanche, b. Feb. 28, 1890, m. abt. 1908, Earl Bort. ch., Marion & Hazel Bort.

E. Edward, b. Feb. 23, 1892, m. Nov. 13, 1915, Lillian Sherman, dau. of Paul and Mary Sherman. Res. near home of compiler. ch., Harley, b. Nov. 19, 1916, & Florence Jane, b. Jan. 27, 1919. Address, Jordan, R. D., Onon. Co., N. Y.

F. Ross George, b. Sept. 8, 1893, d. Oct. 31, 1918.

G. Clarence Charles, b. Nov. 26, 1896, m. Dec. 24, 1917, Mary Katherine Bort. Ch., Otis Essie Lovelace, b. Nov. 20, 1921.

H. Frank, b. May 24, 1899.

I. Merle, b. May 7, 1909.

c. James, m. (1) Miss Jones. m. (2) Mary Reeves. Their 5 ch. are: Fred, Jay, Lucy, Dora, Richard. Res. near Baldwinsville, N. Y.

d. Caleb, m. E. Reeves, sister of Mary Reeves, wife of James Loveless. 5 ch. are Bertha, Lewis, Warren, and 2 other boys.

e. Wayne, m. Clara Loveless, dau. of Ransom or Crandall Loveless. Their son, Homer Loveless, settled in Michigan.

f. Albert, m. May or Mary ?, living in Euclid, N. Y., in 1917.

g. Blanche, d. young.

h. Lucy, m. John Reynolds.

i. Bertha, m. Feb. 19, 1892, Frank Kantak.

2. Crandal or Cram.

3. Ransom or Rance. Had ch. John, Daniel & Annie.

4. Robert, b. Apr. 10, 1843, on Loveless Homestead, Van Beuren, Onon. Co., N. Y. d. June 10, 1910. m. July 9, 1871, Clara Hiller, dau. of Abram Hiller.

Child. (5)

a. Belle, b. Aug. 2, 1872, m. Frank Scott. No ch. Res. R.F.D. No. 4, Syracuse, N. Y., Mar. 6, 1917, when she sent this data.

b. Lester Marion, b. May 6, 1873, m. Ruby Ecker. Res. 1917 — 1008 Cochran St., Spokane, Wash. 6 ch. are Robert Jesse, Marion Leticia, Herbert, Harold, Virginia Belle, Clarissa Minerva.

c. Bert Abram, b. Feb. 13, 1875. A student in Philadelphia Medical College in 1896. Res. Coeur d'Alene, Idaho. Practicing physician there. m. Hattie Tappen. 3 ch.: Frances May, Helen Gertrude, Edith Belle.

d. May Elizabeth, b. Mar. 15, 1878, m. Sept. 8, 1902, Newton Blanding, of Solvey, N. Y. 5 Blanding ch. are Leo Randall, b. Aug. 31, 1903; Doris Mabel, b. Apr. 6, 1905; Arthur Robert, b. Nov. 26, 1907; Clarence Freeman, b. June 16, 1911; Morris LeRoy, b. May 25, 1913.

e. George Henry, b. Aug. 31, 1886, m. Aug. 31 ?, Eulalia McCle. Have son, Karl.

5. Lewis, has son, Clinton.

6. Charles. Ch.: Irving, Mable, Jennie, William, Fred, and others younger.

7. Emily or Emma, m. Mr. Elliot. Ch.: Robert and Frank Elliot.

8. Laura Ann, m. Elizur Cornell. Ch., Augusta Cornell Davis, of North Syracuse, N. Y.

9. Elizabeth Jane, b. July 8, ?, m. July 4, ?, Levi Steves, of Belle Isle, N. Y. Ch.: Flora Alice Steves.

Solomon Loveless (g. 14), Jeremiah (g. 13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis Lovelace (10), Sir William (9), etc. b. Jan. 9, 1799, at Pittston, Albany Co., N. Y. d. Dec. 5, 1885, "age 86 years," at Skaneateles, N. Y. m. Feb. 26, 1826, Harriet Augusta Thompson, at Skaneateles, N. Y. (b. Oct. 12, 1799, probably in Vermont, and d. in Skaneateles Mar. 23, 1857, age 56 yrs., 5 mo. Buried on Loveless lot in Lake View Cemetery. See her ancestry.). m. (2) June 30, 1858, Ann Eliza Conover (b. Aug. 28, 1821, d. May 21, 1887, age 66 yrs., 9 mos., at Skaneateles, N. Y.).

Child. (1st wife)

1. Charles B., b. Nov. 9, 1826, d. Mar. 4, 1839, age 12 yrs. 6 mo.

2. Harriet Augusta, b. May 29, 1830, d. Apr. 15, 1882, unm., in Syracuse, N. Y.

3. Sarah Matilda,* b. Jan. 7, 1832, d. Apr. 30, 1867. m. Oct. 19, 1858 to George Kershaw Amerman, M.D., of Chicago, the foremost surgeon of his day in that city, Professor of Surgery in Rush Medical College, founder of Cook County Hospital, graduate of New York Medical College, b. July 12, 1832, d. June 20, 1867.*

Child. Amerman.

a. Charles Morris, d. in infancy, in Chicago, June 20, 1864.

b. George Loveless,** b. Dec. 14, 1865, m. Apr. 25, 1898, to Harriet Duguid, in Syracuse, N. Y.

Child. Amerman.

I. Henry Duguid, b. Aug. 24, 1900, in Syracuse. m. Aug. 8, 1922, in Auburn, N. Y., to Ruth L. Jordan. Ch., Charles Jordan, b. July 23, 1924.

II. Peter Van Buren, b. Jan. 24, 1905, at New Haven, Conn., m. May 3, 1924, in Skaneateles, N. Y., to Adele L. Dodge. Ch.: Van Buren Dodge, b. Nov. 7, 1924; David Peter, b. Nov. 30, 1926.

III. George Loveless, Jr., b. May 17, 1910, at Marcellus, N. Y.

Child. (2nd wife)

4. Fred Howard, b. Feb. 29, 1860, d. July 14, 1924. m. Mar. 18, 1891, Louise Front Bentley (b. Aug., 1862). Attended Eastman Business College, Poughkeepsie, N. Y.; a successful farmer, living on West Lake Road, Skaneateles;

---

*Both died when I was only a bit over one year old and I was brought up under the name of "Bradley" (family of Professor Cornelius B. Bradley, Emeritus, of University of Calif.) until I entered Yale University, when I assumed my own name of Amerman.

**From George L. Amerman, Ph.D., "Sunny Side," 6 Onondaga St., Skaneateles, N. Y.

Assessor for the town and trustee for the Skaneateles Presbyterian Church.

Children.

a. Gaylord Allen, b. Apr. 26, 1892; d. May 3, 1892.

b. Harold Frederick, b. July 2, 1893, m. Oct. 24, 1925, Hazel Mae Smith. Ch., Gaylord Frederick, b. June 3, 1927.

c. Mary Louisa, b. Nov. 12, 1896.

d. Helen Electa, b. June 21, 1899, a nurse. m. Apr., 1931, Douglas Wallace McNamara.

5. May Elizabeth, b. Feb. 11, 1862. Res. 1936, Skaneateles, N. Y. (Graduated from Wellesley College, Mass., a teacher of ability in the Syracuse Schools of Goodyear, Burlingame Private School, etc.)

Ancestry of Harriet Augusta Thompson (b. Oct. 12, 1799, m. 1826, Solomon Loveless). She was ch. of Ezekiel Thompson b. 1766, "8 yrs. younger than wife," m. Nov. 25, 1790, Mary Bosworth, who was b. Dec. 5, 1758, Halifax, Mass., of the 6th gen. in descent from Edward Bosworth, who came from England in 1634 (*Bosworth Genealogy*). He was ch. of Peter Thompson b. Oct. 8, 1733, Middleborough, Mass., m. Rebecca Thomas, 6th ch. of John and Lydia (Parker) Thomas (*The Thomas Book*, 1896). Child of Thomas Thompson and Marthe Soule, who was the 4th gen. in descent from George Soule of the Mayflower (*Sole-Soule Families*, Ridlon). Child of John Tomson (b. 1648, d. Nov. 25, 1725, m. Mary Tinkham, who was 6th ch. of Ephraim Tinkham, of Plymouth, and Mary Brown), dau. of Peter Brown, of the Mayflower (p. 54, *Hist. of Town of Middleboro*, Weston, 1906. "Ephraim Tinkham"). 2nd ch. of Lieut. John Thompson and Mary Cooke, b. 1626, dau. of Francis Cooke, of the Mayflower.

Joseph Lovelace (g. 13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis Lovelace (10), etc. "Of English birth (or ancestry),

served as a baker in War of Revolution." *History of Logan Co., Ohio.* A Joseph Loveless joined the Continental Army from Dutchess Co., N. Y.

"Joseph Lovelace & family came in 1793 to Beaverkill (East Branch P.O., 15 miles from Shehocken, Delaware Co., N. Y.). Res. there 2 years, then moved to Merricks Flats, where he lived for 7 yrs. Thence to Shehocken & Tompkins, where he d. He had a large family. Eldest son, Thomas, d. 1879, age 90. He was a great hunter. Killed 30 deer per year for many years & 8 bears in one year." p. 212, *Hist. of Delaware Co., N. Y.* Mussell & Co. m. Mary ?, of Scotch ancestry.

Child. (3).

+1. Thomas, b. abt. 1789, m. 1811, Sarah Ann Sprouels.

2. Prob. Richard, b. ?, m. ?, a Patterson. See p. 157, miscellaneous families.

3. Hannah, b. 1799, Monmouth Co., N. Y., d. 1865, Salinas, Calif. m. (1) Hopkins. m. (2) Dec. 30, 1823, Daniel Owen Darby (b. 1806, Butler Co., Ohio, d. 1875. s. of Wm. & Mary (Fritz or Fretz) Darby). They settled in Columbia Twp. in 1828. 3 Hopkins ch.: Mary, Emily, Joseph. 9 Darby ch.: Margaret, Wm. O., Nancy, John D., Sarah J., Lucinda, Elizabeth, Lucinda 2nd, Elizabeth 2nd.

Data sent in and requested by Mrs. M. H. (Mabel) Storck, Box 303, Storm Lake, Iowa, June 24, 1942, & 210 Irving Pl., Storm Lake, on Mar. 29, 1848. p. 271, *Hist. of Fayette Co., Ind.,* 1885. Willett W. Lovelace, 327 Kathmere Rd., Brookline, Del. Co., N. Y.

Thomas Loveless (g. 14), Joseph (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc. b. abt. 1789, as he d. 1879, age 90. Deeds for land transfer show his father was Joseph. In 1839 he purchased 97 acres of land in Logan Co., Ohio. They res. in New Egypt, a small community near Fort Dix, N. J. m. Dec. 31, 1811, by Wm. Burtes, Justice

(rec. Book A, p. 147, *Marriage Records* Monmouth Co. Court House, Freehold, N. J., via Ruth S. Dibben), Sarah Ann Sprouels, whose father served as a gunner in the Revolution. Her gr. fath. was kidnapped & brought to this country when young & sold for the price of his passage.

Child. (8) — b. Monmouth Co., N. J.

1. Hannah, b. ?, m. King. 2 King ch.; res., Salinas, Calif.
2. Aaron, who went to Oregon.
3. Fermin, who went to Oregon.
4. George, who went to Oregon.
5. William, who went to Oregon.
6. Thomas, who went to Oregon.
7. Joseph, who went to Oregon.
8. John, b. Dec. 28, 1824, d. ?, m. July, 1847, Emeline Curl (b. 1829, Perry Twp., d. Aug. 14, 1865, dau. of Joseph & Catherine (Williams) Curl). Before leaving N. J. he saw the first train to run on rails in America — Trenton & Amboy R.R. — cars propelled by horses. At age 7 he went with his parents to Summit, Ohio. In June, 1838, to Logan Co., Ohio, where at age 17 he learned the blacksmith's trade. He set up shop in 1848 in Pickereltown, Monroe Twp., Logan Co., Ohio. Worked there until 1860, when he took up farming. Member of M. E. Church & East Liberty Masonic Lodge. pp. 572 & 672, *Hist. of Logan Co., O.*, 1880, Baskin & Co.

Child. (3)

a. Mauda, m. James Smith. Her dau., Mrs. W. E. (Bessie Smith) Stanton, of Miamisberg, Ohio, Oct. 20, 1942, when she employed Ruth R. Dibben, Genealogist, of 174 Maple Ave., Red Bank, N. J., to seek her ancestry.

b. Hannah E., m. Zack Taylor.

c. Frank, m. Jan. 17, 1869, Mrs. Elizabeth Ann (Wirick) Outland (b. Sept. 13, 1832, dau. of John B. & Maria (Dickson) Wirick & wid. of Samuel Outland), s. of Joseph Outland.

George Loveless (g. 15), John (14), Joseph (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis, etc. b. abt. 1771, as d. June 22, 816, in the 65th yr. of his age at Meridian, N. Y., and buried in the Old Cato Cemetery. (Gravestone rec.)

"George Loveless settled in the south part of Meridian, N. Y., in 1804. He was one of the 22 first members of the Baptist Church founded there Oct. 26, 1810. Rev. Daniel Palmers, first pastor." *Hist. of Cayuga Co., N. Y.*, Storke.

His name appears in 1790 census as of Pittstown, Albany Co., N. Y. The 1810 census of Cato, N. Y., shows him as having 8 in the family. Town records show his name and the names of various members of his family in land sales and transfers. There is a marker at Meridian which names George Loveless & Able Pasco as first settlers in 1804.

m. Ruama ? (b. abt. 1778, as d. Mar. 1, 1847, in 69th yr., bur. with husband. Her will dated Feb. 20, 1847, men-

Florance Loveless Keeney John Edwin Robertson

tions 7 ch., of which she indicates John, Phoebe and Esther as deceased.). In 1937 Anna Meachem sent in careful copies of Baptist Church and other records as kept by her grandfather from 1817 to 1859, and from these much of this data is derived. The names of Zerua Loveless & William Loveless are also mentioned but not identified.

Child. (7)

1. Ruama, res. 1848, Damascus, Henry Co., Ohio. m. before Nov. 6, 1828, when she signed a paper as Ruama Herring, a Mr. Herring. Later she is referred to as Ruama Herring, now Mrs. Roberts. m. (2) Robert Roberts, who with wife Ruama were among the heirs of Ruama Loveless in 1847. Mar., 1844, Anna & Phoebe Herring, Rufus, Jane & Stephen Roberts were bapt. They were prob. ch. of Ruama Loveless.

2. Ezra, res. Cato, N. Y., in 1847, but in 1862 reported to be somewhere in the West — perhaps Iowa.

3. George, res. Perrysburg, Ohio, in 1848.

4. John, d. June, 1830, in Ohio, near Cleveland. 6 ch. as named in letters of Sept., 1851, from Washington Loveless, were:

a. George Warner, b. abt. 1817, res. in 1838, South Charlestown, Clark Co., Ohio.

b. Charlotte, m. Isaac Graham & had dau. Simphony Graham, who d. Mar. 7, 1857.

c. Phoebe, m. Elias Houskins. In 1851 she & bro. Charles res. Middletown, Logan Co., Ill.

d. Charles.

e. Washington.

f. Solomon. Feb. 14, 1854, he & Washington were leaving for California from Missouri, where they had settled before Sept., 1852.

5. Phoebe, res. near Cleveland, Ohio, same house as occupied by brother John at time of his death. m. Mr. Clements. 3 Clements ch. were:

a. John, age 33, when he moved to Indiana in 1838.

b. Charles, res. on Big Miami River, near Charlestown, Ohio.

c. Abram, res. Indiana in 1836 & moved to New Orleans before 1842.

6. Esther, d. Van Buren, Onon. Co., N. Y. m. Ezra Huntley, who d. between Apr., 1858, & Mar, 1859, at Baldwinsville, N. Y.

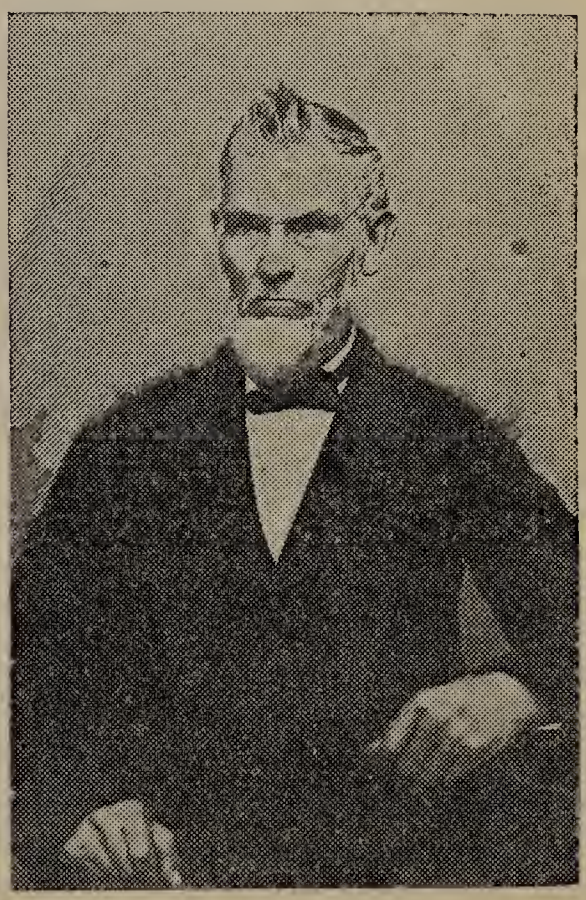
Child. (3) — Huntley.

a. Eliza Jane, b. Mar 4, 1835, m. before 1858, Alson Field, who d. before 1874. Res., Onondaga Hill, N. Y. In 1861 moved to Heath, Mich., & thence to Trowbridge, Allegan Co., Mich. A dau. b. 1859 & m. after 1874.

b. John Lavator, b. abt. 1837, as age 11 in 1848. Res. Baldwinsville, & had 3 ch. in 1874.

c. Mary Ann, b. Feb. 26, 1840. In 1847 she was living with Mrs. Roberts and her grandmother, Ruama Loveless, gave Mrs. Roberts a special bequest in her will for the care of this child. She d. before 1857.

Mary Mores (Goss) Loveless

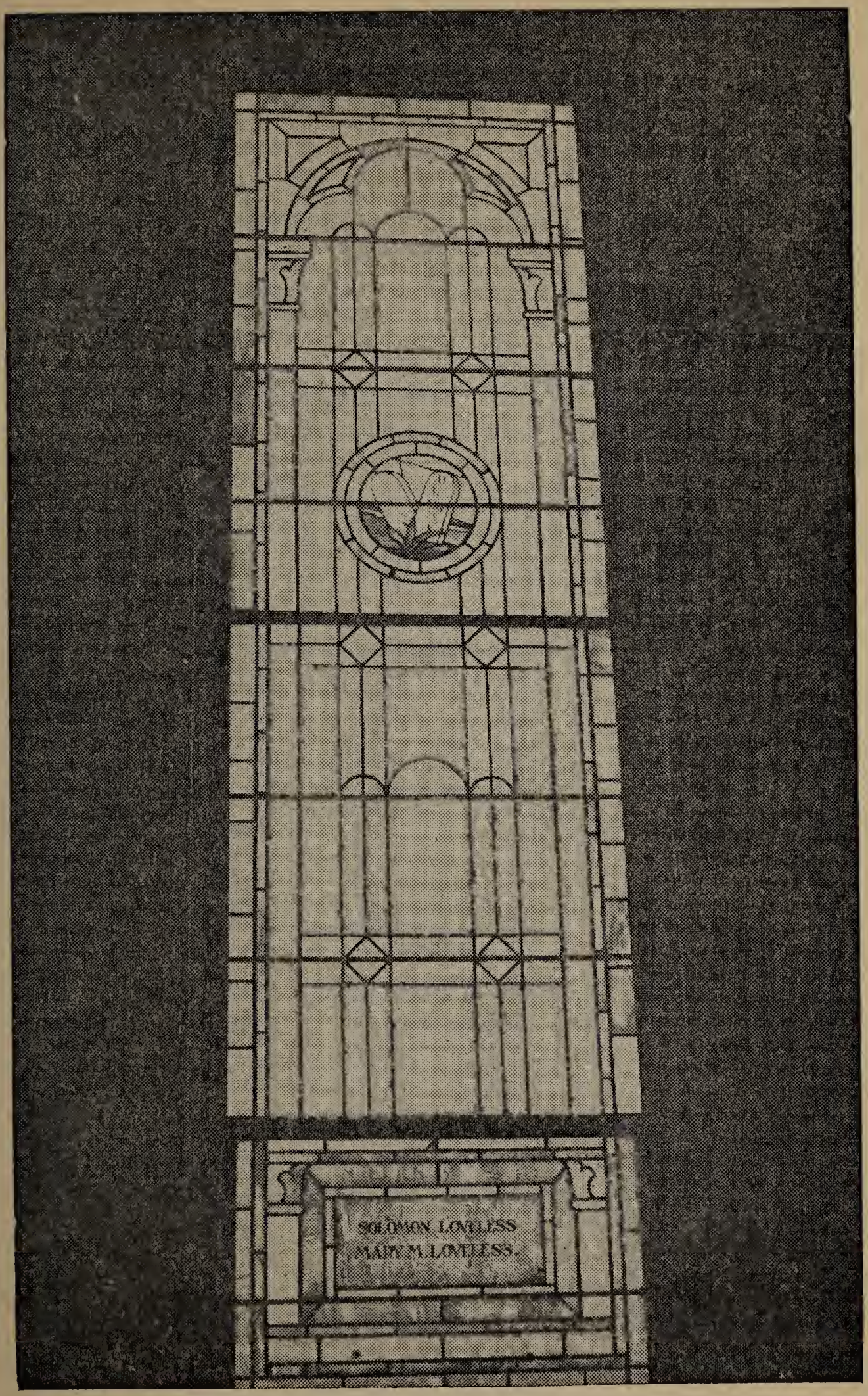


Solomon Loveless

7. Solomon, b. Aug. 1, 1801, d. Aug. 1, 1876, on 75th birthday, at Loveless Farmhouse on East side of Otter Lake, south of Meridian, on the center of Bonta Bridge Road. Here all his children and grand dau., Florance Loveless Keeney Robertson, compiler of this genealogy, were born. He had come to Meridian with his father's family in 1804 at the age of 3 yrs. Kept the Hunt House or Eagle Hotel there before he purchased Loveless Farm. This was a stopover for the stage carrying mail from the south in earliest times and the last stop for the slaves escaping to Canada via Farmhaven, an essential part of the "underground railroad" of pre Civil War days.

Cora Loveless before and after her marriage.

m. Mary Mores Goss (b. Feb. 20, 1809, Northborough, Mass., d. Feb. 21, 1893, at Loveless farm home. She was dau. of Lydia Goddard & William Goss). Rev. Charles Frederick Goss, author of *The Redemption of David Carson*, Grosset & Dunlap Co., N. Y., 1900, was a nephew of William Goss. He was b. June 14, 1852, Meridian, son of Simon Startwell & Mary Catherine (Weaver) Goss.



Memorial Window to Solomon and Mary Loveless in Meridian Baptist Church.

Child. (7)

a. William, d. infancy.

b. Celia Emorett, b. 1829, m. 1869 as his 2nd wife, John Robinson. He was brother of Charles Robinson, who moved to Kansas and became the first governor of that state. Soon after their marriage they were visited by Gov. Robinson and wife, Sara.

c. Abner, b. 1830, went to California by boat around Cape Horn, South America. m. there, but died soon after marriage, leaving no children.

d. George, b. 1833, went to California with brother Abner and not heard from thereafter, but reported to have been killed by Indians.

e. Mary Elma, b. June 16, 1841, bp. Feb. 29, 1859. m. George Wyatt and had sons, Albert & William Wyatt.

f. Flora, b. 1846, d. 1867, m. 1865 as his first wife, John Robinson.

g. Cora Estell Goss, b. Mar 15, 1851, d. Aug. 2, 1920, at Loveless Farm, m. Nov. 13, 1881, Isaac Thair Keeney (b. 1854, d. Oct. 7, 1928, killed by auto at El Monte, Calif. Vol. I, *The Keayne-Keen(e)-Keeney-Kinney* and Allied Families, 1942c by this compiler shows his extensive ancestry to earliest Colonal immigrants as Priscilla Mullins and others.). Their ch. were Florance, compiler of this genealogy, & Ruth, b. 1892, d. age 6 weeks.

Florance Loveless Keeney, compiler, was b. Nov. 28, 1884, Loveless Farm, Cayuga Co., N. Y., res. at this writing, 2447 So. Orange Dr., Los Angeles 16, Calif. m. June 15, 1913, Los Angeles, Calif., John Edwin Robertson (b. Feb. 25, 1878, Eureka, Kan., son of Wm. Mark & Sophronia (Suttle) Robertson). No children. She received her M.A. degree in 1929 from the University of Southern California in Los Angeles, was for many years a successful teacher of adults and in high school in New York and California and writer of educational articles. p. 283, R 59, 1945 edition of

The Handbook of American Genealogy, mentions her achievements. p. 448, Vol. IV — Virkus — *Compendium of American Genealogy,* shows her photo and ancestry. Also R 47 in "Who's Who" of American Genealogists. 1932. For more complete personal biography see 1935 edition of *Principal Women of America.* Mitre Press, London, England, and 1935 edition of *American Women.* Richard Blank Pub. Co., Los Angeles, Calif.

CHAPTER V — Lovelace and Loveless Families of Ohio, Vermont and Pennsylvania

George Lovelace (g. 13), John (g. 12), Edward, (g 11), Gov. Francis (g. 10). He came to Warren, Ohio, in 1800; built a grist mill there in 1802 and a dam in 1804. p. 406, *History of Youngstown & the Mahoning Valley, Ohio.* Butler, 1921. His probable son was George Loveless (Lovelace) (g. 14), b. June 20, 1802, Warren, Trumbull Co., Ohio, d. Jan. 28, 1892, Grand Lodge, Mich. m. (1) Apr. 15, 1824, Edinburg, Portage Co., Ohio, Eliza Martin (b. Feb. 2, 1805, d. Oct. 12, 1872). He m. (2) May 24, 1874, Phoebie A. Hinnman as her 3rd husband. Her 1st husband, Wm. B. Skidmore, d. Apr. 12, 1863, and her 2nd husband, Curtis Hinnman, d. May 26, 1867.

Child. (8) (g. 15), b. Portage, Ohio, of George & Eliza (Martin) Loveless.

1. Elizabeth, b. Aug. 23, 1825, d. Dec. 9, 1915, Cedar Valley, Edmonds, R.D., Wash. m. (1) Jan. 2, 1847, Wm. Robbins Selby. She m. (2) June 4, 1857, John Hill.

Child. (3) Selby. Source, Mrs. E. A. Cimmery, Edmonds, R.D. 1, Wash., June 11, 1917.

a. William, b. Aug. 16, 1848, d. Feb. 17, 1887.
b. George, b. May 9, 1850, d. Sept. 26, 1884.
c. Eliza Abigail, b. Apr. 17, 1853.

Child. (5) Hill.

d. Mary Elizabeth, b. Dec. 20, 1858.
e. Lucy Dora, b. Aug. 1, 1860.
f. Harry Bruce, b. Mar. 11, 1862.
g. Clara Adell, b. July 31, 1865.
h. Birdeen Rose, b. Sept. 2, 1868.

2. Seth, b. Apr. 27, 1827, d. Oct. 25, 1906, Masonic Home, Decota, Colo.

3. Sylvester, b. Dec. 5, 1828, d. Apr. 12, 1887, Chester, Mich., unm.

4. Warren Augustus, b. Feb. 8, 1833, m. twice. d. June 28, 1897. Enlisted 2nd Mich. Cavalry in 1861.

5. George Blackman, b. Aug. 27, 1835, d. Nov. 13, 1901, Grand Lodge, Mich. He had a dau. who m. Dr. F. A. James of Allegan St., Lansing, Mich.

6. Mary, b. Aug. 5, 1839, d. Jan. 10, 1898, Chester, Mich. m. Mr. Betts & had 2 Betts child., i.e., George & Lowell.

7. Lewis Martin, b. Oct. 12, 1841, enlisted 1861 in 2nd Mich. Cavalry. d. unm. June 3, 1862, in U. S. Hospital at Hamburg, Tenn.

8. Lydia Caroline, b. Sept. 1, 1844, m. (1) Feb. 12, 1863, Joel McPeak, who d. Apr. 15, 1915. She m. (2) Oct. 21, 1922, E. F. Kent. In 1917 she res. 220 Scott St., Grand Lodge, Mich.

Child (1) — McPeak.

Ella Mae, m. Frank Dunn. Their s., Harold Dunn, m. Harriet Brunger and had a dau., Susan Brunger Dunn, who in 1917 res. 315 Harrison St., Grand Lodge, Mich.

Ariel C. Loveless (Lovelace) (g. 16), John (15), John (14) (b. 1760), John (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), etc.

b. 1812, in Vermont. He and his two sisters visited the home of Braman Holden Loveless, contributor of this data, when he was a small boy. He m. Eliza Gray or Grey of Saratoga, N. Y., & the family moved to Kane Co., Ill., in 1850.

Child. (9)

1. Braman, b. May 27, 1839, Hadley N. Y., d. Nov. 3, 1914, 145 N. Louise St., Glendale, Calif. m. (1) 1863, Mary Twedale (b. 1842, d. 1864; her father was a Scotch nobleman). m. (2) 1865, Huldah Holden (b. 1842,

d. 1925, Glendale; of English parentage). He served 3 yrs. & 1 mo. in Co. A, 36th Ill. Infantry, Civil War.

Child. (4)

a. Frank Ariel, b. June 13, 1864, d. Dec., 1927, m. Lizzie Liesenberg. 7 ch. res. Chi., Ill., are Roy, Ethel, Alice, Helen, Pearl, Gertrude & Mabel.

b. Braman Holden, b. 1867, m. (1), 1890, Alice Guild. m. (2), 1912, Alice Vera Swanson. Bus. add., 818 Home Savings & Loan Co. Bldg., Youngstown, Ohio, in 1923.

Child. (4)

(1) Wendell Phillips, b. Feb. 2, 1892. In Marine Corps in World War I.

(2) Claire C., b. June 15, 1894. Served in Europe with distinction.

(3) Braman Holden, Jr., b. Jan. 2, 1913.

(4) Benj. Edward, b. Feb. 4, 1916.

c. Benjamin Edward, b. Aug. 7, 1869, m. 1890, Mabel Shepardson. He was a clergyman. d. Feb. 5, 1893, leaving no children.

d. Gertrude, b. July 13, 1877, m. June 15, 1905, Robert Beveridge, who d. 1911.

Child. (Beveridge), Helen, b. Apr. 8, 1906, & Braman, b. Jan. 27, 1908.

2. Elvira, who d. at Wheaton, Ill., in 1891. m. Charles Wesley Fletcher. 4 Fletcher ch. were Charles (Baptist minister), Mrs. Eliza Reed, Mrs. Lottie Page, Mrs. Alice (Alexander) Hetherton.

3. John, d. young.

4. Sarah, m. Sylvester Hammer. 5 Hammer ch.

5. Hannah, m. John W. Carr. 2 Carr ch.

6. Rachael, m. John Wesley Fletcher, nephew of Charles Wesley Fletcher, who m. her sister. 5 Fletcher ch.

7. Charles, m. Clara Belle Hitchcock. He d. May 27, 1923. 3 ch.

8. Francis, d. young.

9. Della, d. young.

"About ten years ago a clergyman visited my father in Los Angeles, Calif. He, it appeared, was also a Loveless. He told my father that he had for many years been compiling a history of the Loveless family, that he found in England records of a clergyman by that name who about 250 years ago had done much to improve the lower classes, by teaching them sanitation, how to bring up their children, how to read and write. The condition of the laboring class was so much improved within a few years that the aristocracy became alarmed and Parliament banished him from the United Kingdom and he lived the balance of his life in France and died there about 1700 A.D." — Braman Holden Loveless, 1923.

Stephen Loveless (g. 15), John (g. 14) (1760), John (13), John (12), Edward (11), etc.

b. abt. 1794. d. May 4, 1855, in 61st yr. & bur. Pleasantville, Venango Co., Pa. Abt. 1849 he came to Pa. from Auburn, N. Y., & bought a farm near Pleasantville. m. Miss Matthews.

Child. (10).

1. David, m. twice. 2 ch. were:

a. Sarah, m. Homer Fox (son of David K. Fox of Westfield, N. Y.). Ch., David K. Fox, Jr.

b. John Henry, b. Oct. 27, 1849, near Auburn. d. Apr. 8, 1923. m. July 1, 1869, by Rev. Holdman of Pleasantville, Sylvia Adelaide Madison. 7 Loveless ch. were:

(1) Georgia Anna, b. Mar. 23, 1875, unm. in 1923.

(2) Willis Eddman, b. Dec. 23, 1875. m. Aug. 1, 1903, Niagara Falls, Marthe Maud Madison, of Bradford, Pa. Had ch., Arlouine, b. June 18, 1905.

(3) Will, b. July 26, 1880, m. Sept. 6, 1901, Mary Ford, of Toronto, Canada. Ch., Mary Burdeen, b. Sept. 10, 1903, St. Catherine, Canada.

(4) Charles Leon, b. Apr. 19, 1882, Westfield. m.

Sept. 15, 1911, Laura Smith, of Titusville, Pa. Their 4 Loveless ch. are:

A. Bessie Roena, b. June 13, 1914.

B. Sylvia Lucina, b. Nov. 24, 1918.

C. Alice Lucile, b. Aug. 17, 1920.

D. Norman Austin, b. Mar. 11, 1923.

(5) Frederick Leroy, b. Feb. 23, 1884. m. Apr. 1, 1912, Rose Lurpean, of Mayville, N. Y. Their 3 Loveless ch. are:

A. Lester Leroy, b. July 29, 1913.

B. Wilhemina Clara, b. July 6, 1915.

C. Lenord Lewis, b. Apr. 10, 1916.

(6) Clara Ethel, b. Apr., 1890, res. Nov., 1923, unm., 69 Jefferson St., Westfield, N. Y., when she contributed this data.

(7) Rose Burdeen, b. Aug. 8, 1894. m. Dec. 12, 1915, Rollie Hess, Jamestown, N. Y.

2. Sidney, had a family, went to N. Y. State & later West. His dau., Mrs. Margaret Harwood, res. Boise, Idaho.

3. Nathan, d. Aug. 8, 1862, at Harrison's Landing on Potomac River, in Civil War. Had m. Mary Walker.

Child. (6).

a. Lewis L., b. Oct. 7, 1846.

b. Sarah, b. Feb. 2, 1848. m. Mr. Johnson & left a family of Johnson daughters.

c. Stephen B., b. Feb. 4, 1850, near Auburn, N. Y. d. Feb. 27, 1923, buried at Butler, Pa., "age 73 yrs. & 23 da." m. July 27, 1872, to Emaline Dunn. She resided 611 Center Ave., Butler, Pa., when she sent this data.

Child. (4).

(1) Bertha, b. Aug. 20, 1873. m. Oct. 11, 1893, Mr. Weber. Child, Blair Weber, b. Jan. 27, 1895, lives in Butler, Pa.

(2) Martha or Mattie, b. Jan. 7, 1878, at Karns City, Pa. m. July 21, 1903, Mr. Morrison. No children. Lives in Tampico, Mexico (Oct., 1923).

(3) Jessie, b. Sept. 18, 1884, at Karry City, Butler Co., Pa. m. Sept. 25, 1909, Mr. Kilmer. Lives at Unity Station, Allegheny Co., Pa. (Oct., 1923). Child, Ruth Kilmer, b. Dec. 28, 1910.

(4) Stephen B., Jr., b. in Butler Co., Apr. 12, 1892. m. Oct. 1, 1919, ?.

Child. (2).

A. Richard Stephen, b. Aug. 21, 1920.

B. George Ernest, b. Apr. 26, 1922. Lives in Greenville, Mercer Co., Pa., in 1923.

d. Maggie, b. 1855. m. Mr. Madison. She d. in Kansas, leaving 2 Madison girls.

e. Stacy, lived in Bradford, Pa. A widower, no ch. When he was a child his mother and grandmother went to Jordan, N. Y., on a visit to relatives.

f. Nathan, Jr., b. Mar. 22, ?. m. and had sons, Harold & Max.

4. Martha, m. Mr. Scott. Had a large family near Pleasantville, Pa.

5. Harriet, m. Mr. Parker. 4 Parker ch.

6. Hannah.

7. Norman.

8. Stephen Henry, d. age 13, same month as his father. Both had typhoid fever.

9. Louis or Lewis, d. Pleasantville, left 2 ch.

10. Charles Reynolds, b. Jan. 2, 1845, res. Sept., 1923, when he sent data, 16 W. 1st St., Oil City, Pa. m. (1) May 2, 1868, to Mary Couch. m. (2) July 2, 1886, to Julia Morse. m. (3) Sept. 7, 1899, to Dorinthey Daniels. m. (4) Oct. 17, 1921, to Katheryne Weinkel, of Dempseytown, Pa. d. Mar 16, 1922. 14 children, of whom many d. young, and including Ida, who m. John Wann, of Dewey, Oklahoma; a. Lela, who m. Rev. Roy Scouten, of Oswego, R.D., N. Y.; b. Charles Harold, m. Ethel I. Burchfield & had Harold Le Roy, b. Mar. 21, 1908, & Charles Arthur, b. May 13, 1910; c. Frank, last known, in Drumwright, Okla.;

d. Marguerite, m. Burt E. Page, Jr. She d. Sept. 28, 1921, leaving ch., Philip McGregor Page, b. Sept. 28, 1920, & Burt E. Page, b. Sept. 28, 1921; e. Glen Rolland, b. June 6, 1889, Chapmanville, Pa., m. Oct. 16, 1915, Oil City, Pa., Cordelia Jane Perry (b. Dec. 15, 1897, North Girard, Erie Co., Pa.). Res. Oct., 1922, when he sent in data, 5916 Wabash Ave., Detroit, Mich. Ch., Glen, Jr., b. Apr. 16, 1819, & Charles Perry, b. Oct. 5, 1920.

Daniel Douglas Lovelace (g. 15), John (g. 14) (1760), John (13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), William (9), etc.

b. Dec. 11, 1799, Poultney, Vermont. d. July 8, 1865, Hadley, Saratoga Co., N. Y. m. 1822, Prudence Jenkins (b. Nov. 16, 1806, in New Hampshire, d. Dec. 17, 1882, Tioga, Pa., dau. of John and Polly (Houghton) Jenkins).

Child. (11) (g. 16).

1. Polly B., b. Nov. 25, 1825, d. Aug. 6, 1855, Tioga, Pa. m. near Moriah, N. Y., Sept., 1844, Curtis Edgerton Reed (b. Feb. 20, 1821, d. Mar. 17, 1884, s. of Enoch & Abiah (Comm) Reed. His sister, Caroline Reed, m. Charles Loveless.).

Child. (2) — Reed.

a. Colby, b. Jan. 1, 1846, Co. H, 7th Vermont Infantry, in Civil War. m. Oct. 29, 1867, Florence DeLong (b. July 27, 1850).

Child. (5) — Reed.

(1) Curtis E., b. Sept. 19, 1868, m. Mar. 18, 1890, Emma Reynolds, of Tioga, Pa. 6 Reed ch. are Colby O., b. Mar. 6, 1892; Hazel Belle, b. Apr. 4, 1895; Helen Mildred, b. Oct. 4, 1896; Allen, b. Dec. 18, 1897; Walter, b. Sept., 1900; Luther Maurice, b. Jan., 1902.

(2) Harry B., b. Oct. 22, 1871, res. Dec., 1930, 58 Elliot St., Corning, N. Y., when he wrote re the family. m. Oct. 14, 1896, Adaline Saxton, of Canton, Pa. 2 ch., both d. young.

(3) Katherine V., b. Aug. 23, 1875. m. Dec. 10, 1896, Leon Blo Bliss, of Brooklyn, N. Y. Res., 1906, Sioux Falls, So. Dakota. 2 Bliss ch.

(4) Marvin D., b. Oct. 23, 1877. m. Mar. 27, 1901, Ida Patterson. Res., 1906, Gettysburg, So. Dakota. Ch., Verna May Reed, b. Feb. 24, 1902.

(5) Carrie M., b. Mar. 15, 1880. m. July 26, 1899, Charles D. Hathaway, of Tioga, Pa. 3 Hathaway ch. are: Robt. Evans, b. July 9, 1900; Laura Amanda; and Winifred.

b. Alta Edgerton, b. Jan. 1, 1850. m. (1) Dec., 1875, Enos Cook. m. (2) 1897, C. A. Eaton. She d. Aug. 14, 1902, leaving 2 Cook ch., i.e., Simeon R., b. Oct. 1, 1876, unm. in 1906; and Cate P., b. Mar. 3, 1878, m. June, 1900, Murray Gordon.

2. John Jenkins, b. May 5, 1827, d. Sept. 26, 1827.

3. Charles Wesley, b. Nov. 15, 1828, Lucerne, N. Y., d. Mar. 22, 1894, Tioga, Pa., m. Leafy Graham. Their 5 Lovelace ch. were: a. Charles Orville; b. William W., m. Mary Walker & had ch. Westley, Carrie, Warren & Marion; c. Frank A., m. Laura Hildreth & had ch. Eva, Leon, Leslie & Myrtle; d. Fanny P., m. Frank Underwood; e. Leafy.

+4. William Dudley, b. 1831. m. 1856, Cornelia A. Sisson.

5. Orange Dayton, b. Aug. 14, 1833. Started for Oregon on the Overland Trail before the Civil War and never heard from afterwards.

6. Maryette, b. June 26, 1836, d. Aug. 6, 1882, Hadley, N. Y. m. Wm. Graham.

7. Daniel W., b. Sept. 23, 1838, d. June 15, 1864, Glens Falls, N. Y., unm.

+8. Joel J., b. Mar. 8, 1841. m. 1871, Helen M. Johnson.

9. Susan B., b. Oct. 26, 1843, Moriah, N. Y., d. 1921, Tioga, Pa. m. (1) Mr. Palmer, who was killed in

Civil War. m. (2) Stephen Woodcock. Ch. are Daniel Palmer and Cora Woodcock.

10. Frances A., b. June 18, 1846, Hadley, N. Y. m. Dr. J. B. Nichols, who d. Oct. 18, 1871, Pottsdam, N. Y. No ch.

11. Edward Jenkins, b. June 3, 1851, d. June 8, 1920. m. Dec. 23, 1873, Pottsdam, Ida May Farmer (b. Apr. 15, 1855, Middleville, N. Y., dau. of Lemuel and Cynthia (Branson) Farmer).

Child., b. Norwood, N. Y.

a. Henry C., b. May 7, 1875, living unm. at Governeur, N. Y., in 1930.

b. Gertrude, b. Aug. 4, 1876. m. Mr. Keech. Living at 58 Pearl St., Springfield, Mass., in 1930. Had son, Glenn Keech.

c. Frank Edward, b. May 16, 1878. m. Sept. 19, 1901, North Stockholm, N. Y., Grace Eveline Smith (b. Oct. 18, 1878, d. July 2, 1919).

Children:

(1) Victor Dale, b. Dec. 25, 1902.

(2) Floyd Edward, b. Aug. 27, 1905. m. Agnes Gunabosh. Ch., Edward Lovelace, b. Nov. 9, 1930, Geneva, N. Y. Res., 410 Coffin St., Watertown, N. Y., in 1930.

(3) Clyde Smith, b. Jan. 22, 1907, Watertown, N. Y.

(4) Lysle H., b. Nov. 15, 1909.

(5) Ada G., b. July 24, 1915.

d. Cora, and e. Dora, twins, b. May 24, 1880, d. infancy.

f. Ada Vivian, b. May 28, 1885, d. Dec. 6, 1888.

g. Robert Earl, b. Aug. 26, 1890, d. 1923.

William Dudley Lovelace (g. 16), Daniel D. (15) (1799), John (14), etc.

b. Mar. 17, 1831, Port Henry, Essex Co., N. Y. d. Feb. 19, 1895, Melrose, Mass. bur. Glens Falls, N. Y. m. May 19, 1856, Cornelia A. Sisson.

Child. (8) (g. 15), b. Glens Falls.

1. Dorothea, d. young.

2. Fred W., b. Aug. 4, 1857, d. May 30, 1919, Providence, R. I.

3. George Sisson, b. June 18, 1860, d. Oct. 1, 1929. m. (1) Sept. 19, 1881, Eliza Holford Douglas, who d. Dec. 14, 1884. m. (2) Mar. 16, 1887, Ida Elson (b. Apr. 28, 1868). In 1926 he contributed much data and stated he had more in storage. But in 1940, when we contacted his widow, Ida Elson Lovelace, she stated she had given these records to their son, Francis Elson Lovelace, who was unable to locate them. He was an Atty. at Law — office in 1926 — National Bank Bldg., Muskegon, Mich.

Child. (by 1st wife).

a. William Douglas, b. Sept. 20, 1882, Greenville, Conn. m. at New Haven, Conn., Hazel Herlein. No ch.

Child (by 2nd wife).

b. Francis Elson, b. Mar. 4, 1889. m. April 1, 1911, Julia Laura Hills. He grad. Univ. of Mich. in 1912.

Child. (3), b. Muskegon.

(1) Julia Hills, b. Mar. 26, 1912.

(2) Francis Elson, Jr., b. Aug. 17, 1914, unm. 1940.

(3) Anne, b. May 8, 1916, m. Paul Clayton Johnson.

Child. (2) — Johnson.

A. Charles Edward, b. Feb. 22, 1936.

B. Paul Carlton, b. Aug. 9, 1939.

4. William Curtis, b. Sept. 27, 1862, at Perry, Florida.

5. James E., b. Oct. 11, 1865, Providence, R. I.

6. Helen Blanche, b. Feb. 8, 1868. m. Geo. L. Weston, of Portland, Maine.

7. Daniel Dudley, b. June 18, 1873, Danbury, Conn.

8. Merideth Blair, b. June 18, 1876.

Joel J. Loveless (g. 16), Daniel D. (15) (1799), John (14) (1760), John (13), etc.

b. Mar. 8, 1841, Hadley, Saratoga Co., N. Y., d. May 21, 1915. m. Jan. 2, 1871, Helen M. Johnson (b. Aug. 25, 1847, d. Sept. 4, 1916, Escondido).

Child. (4) (g. 17).

1. Elery Joel, b. Dec. 1, 1872. m. Apr. 5, 1897, Ida A. Keeney (dau. of Thomas Benton and Esther A. (Wilders) Keeney. A direct descendant of Alexander Keeney, pioneer of Weathersfield, Conn. See my Keeney books.). Ch., Helen Maud, b. June 4, 1904.

2. Gertrude A., b. Feb. 21, 1874, Hadley, N. Y. m. John C. Stewart. Ch., Arthur Stewart, b. Sept. 2, 1907.

3. Robert B., b. Jan. 15, 1882, Ft. Scott, Bourbon Co., Ky. m. Henrietta Boosey.

4. Helen M., or Nellie, b. June 12, 1887, Gettysburg, Potter Co., So. Dakota. m. Charles Schnack. 1 ch., Mary Schnack, b. June 7, 1915, Escondido.

CHAPTER VI — John Baptist Lovelace, of Maryland

John Baptist Lovelace (g. 13), William (12), Francis of Baltimore (g. 11) (b. 1644), William (1624), (1583), (1561), (1525 or 30), (1480), (1435), Richard (4), John (3), (2), (1).

d. Frederick Co., Md. Will dated July 13, 1765, probated Aug. 16, 1765. (Book 33, Liber C GI, p. 317), at Annapolis, Md., mentions his wife and children. He m. Eleanor ?, who was willed the family home known as "Hermitage."

Child. (9 or more) (g. 14), order of birth uncertain.

"All had large families and many descendants." S. E. McClendon.

+William, b. 1720. m. Margaret Beal.

Elias. McCraken Co., Ky., Mar. 23, 1832, Will of Elias Lovelace, wife Nancy. "To Isaac Prather, son of Eli & Casade Prather, deceased, also Malinda Prather, sister of Isaac." Wit. Andrew Lovelace & Andrew Newman. Elias & Vachel Lovelace, Revolutionary soldiers in Ky. (S.A.R. Year Book, 1890, Ky. Society.)

Luke, m. Mary Ann ?. He, with John & Samuel "Lovelass," lived in Manor of Zachrian in Charles Co., Md., Feb., 1768. Their ch., Una D. Lovelace, b. Sept. 2, 1774.

Charles, m. Catherine Beall (b. 1731, sister of Margery Beal, wife of Wm. Lovelace, Jr.). He enrolled July 18, 1776. (Md. Archives, Vol. XVII, folio 48.)

Isaac, m. Jan. 9, 1794, Sarah Benets (Barrett), license issued Jan. 7, 1794, Prince George Co., Md. Their 2 ch. were Massa Ann, b. Oct. 15, 1794, & Joseph Hanson, b. Dec. 6, 1798.

Rachel.

Archibald, d. childless.

Mary Ann.

Millisant Ann, m. (license issued Dec. 22, 1783, Prince Geo. Co., Md.) Francis Alexander.

William Lovelace, Sr. (g. 14), John Baptist (g. 13).

b. Apr. 2, 1720, Port Tobacco, Charles Co., Md., and still resided there according to census of 1776.

d. Probably he was great grandfather of T. B. Lovelace, of 144 Hinds Terrace, Macon, Ga., who states he was a Revolutionary soldier who was drowned while crossing the Potomac River in Washington's Army. Family tradition states he was survived by wife (2nd wife), who m. Abram Cantrell.

m. Margaret Beal (b. 1727, Montgomery Co., Md., dau. of James and Margaret (Edmonston) Beal). James Beal was b. 1698, d. 1783, will probated Aug. 14, 1783. He was 1st ch. of Robert Beal (immigrant ancestor who settled in Montgomery Co., Md., abt. 1690, b. near St. Andrew's and bapt. Apr. 28, 1670, St. Andrew's Church, Co. Fife, Scotland. d. between 1740 and 1748. m. Mary Berry.). He was son of Thomas and Jenet (Oliphant) Beal or Bell. Margaret Edmonston was b. 1708, dau. of Col. Archibald Edmonston (b. 1670, d. between Mar. 13, 1734, date of Will, and June 28, 1734, probate of Will, Frederick Co., Md., m. 1700, Jane Beal), who was son of Thomas Edmonston (b. 1648, d. 1690). Jane Beal, b. abt. 1685, was 6th ch. of Col. Ninian Beal (b. 1625, Largo, S. Fifeshire, Scotland, and living there on Aug. 16, 1708, when he stated his age was 83 years). He came to Md. in 1658 and d. 1717, Beacon Hill, Prince George Co., Md. (Will probated Feb. 28, 1717.) He had m., 1668, Ruth Moore, who d. 1707. She was youngest dau. of Richard Moore, Atty. of St. Mary's, and wife Jane. *Colonial Families of the United States,* 1929. *The Beall and Bell Families,* by Fielder M. M. Beall.

Children: +William, Jr., b. 1747, m. (1) 1773, Mar-

gery Beal. m. (2) 1809, Janet Hunt; Archibald, went to Iridell Co., North Carolina, with brother William; Aaron, who d. in North Carolina. Possibly other who could have been ancestors of some of the other Lovelace lines of Southern ancestry.

William Lovelace, Jr. (g. 15), William, Sr. (g. 14) (1720), John Baptist (g. 13), William (g. 12), Francis (g. 11) (1644), William (g. 10) (1624), William (g. 9) (1583), etc.

b. July 29, 1747, Frederick Co., Md. Family records state he was b. July 29, 1750, Port Tobacco, Md. (but according to age on gravestone this date is erroneous). Described as "blue eyed boy." Served as a private in Capt. Nathaniel Ewing's Co., 1st Md. Regiment, under Col. John H. Stone. Enlisted June 10, 1778, for 9 months. Name on Company muster roll Feb., 1779, with remarks "on furlough," dated Middlebrook, Mar. 3, 1779. Re-enlisted for one year, July 27, 1781, *Md. Arch.*, Vol. 28, Folios 377 & 410. April 20, 1779, he and Elisha Lovelace received Army supplies in Md. Mentioned with Samuel Lovelace, of Charles Co., Md., in 1775 & 1776. He bought land in Ga. in 1786. d. Aug. 13, 1815, Appling, Columbia Co., Ga., age 68. m. (1), 1773, Iridell Co., No. Carolina, Margery Beall, "a dark eyed body who was greatly honored" (b. Sept. 28, 1747, Montgomery Co., Md., d. Sept., 1803, Appling, Ga.). m. (2), 1809, Columbia Co., Ga., Janet Hunt.

Child. (6) (g. 16) — Family Bible in possession of W. E. Lovelace of Fairfax, Alabama, and McClendon Letters.

Polly or Mary, b. Feb. 20, 1774, d. Nov. 18, 1822. m. John Collins, of Virginia, who d. Dec., 1824.

Child. (2) — Collins.

Wm. Lovelace, b. 1802, d. 1885. m. (1) Mrs. Carsander (Pearre Pierce) Talbert. m. (2), Sarah Allen. m. (3) Alberta Jane Dozier. 2 Collins children were Albert, who m. Miss Shaw, & John, who d. unm.

Nathaniel Fergerson, d. age 78, unm.

Elizabeth, b. May 16, 1776, d. 1869. m. Dec. 4, 1806, James Stapler, of Appling, son of John Stapler & bro. of Mary Stapler, wife of James Lovelace.

+James, b. 1779. m. 1804, Mary Stapler.

Patsy, Peggy or Margaret, b. Feb. 17, 1781. m. Dec., 1804, Isham Fuller, of Far River, North Carolina. 7 Fuller ch. (from Mrs. Annie Mae (Jackson) Jennings, of Anderson, Texas, June 20, 1947) were: Isham; Spivery, Jr., m. Sealy White; Frank, m. Augusta Co., No. Carolina, Miss Flint; Robert; Mary Lovelace, m. Ocala, Fla., Faby Roberts; Martha; Eliza, m. Ocala, Fla., Robert Pounds.

+Allen, b. 1783. m. twice.

Martha, b. May 4, 1786, d. Aug., 1819. m. Wm. Stapler (from Mrs. Jennings). 6 Stapler ch. were: William, James, John, Eliza, Louisa (all 5 of whom d. unm.), Martha Lovelace, m. Atlanta, Ga., Wm. Dozier.

James Lovelace (g. 16), William (g. 15) (1747), William (g. 14) (1720), John Baptist (g. 13), William (g. 12), Francis (g. 11) (1644), William (g. 10) (1624), etc.

b. Apr. 12, 1779, Montgomery Co., Md. He was a soldier in War of 1812, well educated, and a pioneer teacher of Columbia Co., Ga. d. 1860, West Point, Troup Co., Ga., bur. in family cemetery on his old home place. m. int. Dec. 1, 1804, m. Apr. 17, 1805, Mary Stapler (b. Dec. 22, 1783, Appling, Go. d. 1864, West Point, sister of James Stapler, who m. his sister, Elizabeth Lovelace, and Wm. Stapler, who m. his sister, Martha Lovelace). They came from So. Carolina to Troup Co., Ga., in oxcarts & settled in the woods in 1838.

Child. (14) (g. 17). McClendon leters & Bible of Wm. H. Miller, of West Point, Ga.

+Lucius C. Beall, b. 1806. m. Obedience Robinson.

Dr. Mark Tully Cicero, b. 1807, d. 1872. m. Eliza Smith, sister of Gov. Smith of Ga. 3 ch. were: Ella, m. C. C.

Buckner, & d. Texarkana, Tex.; Martha & John, who d. unm.

+Amanda Brooks, b. 1809. m. 1831, James Robinson.

Nancy Stapler, b. Sept. 26, 1810, d. 1858. m. Jan. 15, 1831, Henry Co., Ga., Jacob Miller.

Child. (10) (g. 18) — Miller.

Mary E., b. Feb. 4, 1832, d. Mar. 18, 1908. m. Samuel T. Pharr.

John Wm., b. Aug. 4, 1833, d. June 5, 1868. m. Elizabeth Phillips.

Amanda E., b. June 5, 1835, d. May 20, 1909. m. (1) David D. Knowles; m. (2) Wm. R. Edge.

Sara Jane, b. Feb. 18, 1838, d. May 18, 1841.

Martha Caroline, b. Feb. 27, 1842, d. Aug. 18, 1909.

Mark T. C., b. Apr. 18, 1843, d. Oct. 5, 1846.

Louisa, b. Oct. 9, 1845, d. Dec. 11, 1912.

Alva Curtis, b. July 24, 1848, d. Sept., 1904. m. Nora Taylor.

Henry Washington, b. Sept. 29, 1851, d. Dec. 12, 1931. m. Dec. 24, 1875, Lura D. Williams.

James Allen, b. 1851, twin, d. Dec. 9, 1857.

Julia Powers, b. Apr. 11, 1812, d. May 22, 1823.

Elizabeth Shields, b. June 21, 1814, d. 1888. m. Arthur Branch Baker, of Va.

Child. (5) (g. 8) — Baker.

James Scott, m. (1) Nannie Stone; m. (2) Sally Eady.

William Gilmer, d. unm.

Elizabeth Virginia Branch.

Mary Florida.

Sarah Frances, m. Thos. J. Eady. No ch.

+William Ray, b. 1815. m. Martha Atkinson.

Salinda Waddle, b. Jan. 26, 1817, d. Dec. 11, 1819.

Mary Shaw, b. Nov. 10, 1818, d. Dec. 3, 1849. m. (as his first wife) Henry S. Hanes.

Allen Morton, b. May 9, 1820, d. June 2, 1830.

Jane Crabb, b. Apr. 20, 1822, d. 1890. m. Paul Thompson. No ch.

Louisa Ann, b. Sept. 18, 1823. m. (as his second wife) Henry S. Hanes.

John Henry, b. Dec. 15, 1825. m. Sallie Reese.

James Russell, b. Sept. 12, 1827, d. Jan. 18, 1860, unm.

Lucius C. Beall Lovelace (g. 17), James (g. 16), William (g. 15) (1747), etc.

b. Feb. 6, 1806, Ga. m. Obedience Robinson (dau. of Leggett & Elizabeth (Bennett) Robinson, natives of So. Carolina & settlers in Henry Co., Ga., in 1820). They came to Tampe Co., Ga., in 1831.

Child. (10) (g. 18), b. Ga.

James, killed 1862 in Civil War. m. Mary Davis.

Elizabeth. m. Geo. Taylor.

John. m. Melissa Brooks.

Sallie. m. (1) John Ward; m. (2) A. C. Williams.

Lucius T. C., b. 1839, on the farm where he lived in 1896. Jury and County Commissioner; Master Mason; of unbending integrity; farmer; he and family were members of M. E. Church. m. 1866, Amanda Davidson (dau. of Elias & Lucretia (Leverett) Davidson).

Child. (4) (g. 19), p. 923, Vol. II, 1895, *Memoirs of Georgia*: Samuel, Amanda O., Lula, Lucius Beall.

Samuel, d. of measles in Civil War.

Jane. m. J. C. Davidson. No ch.

Margaret, Eliza, William (who d. unm.).

Amanda Brooks Lovelace (g. 17), James (g. 16) (1779), William (g. 15).

b. Mar. 17, 1809, West Point, Ga., d. Nov. 24, 1888, Old Forksville, La. m. 1831, James Robinson (b. Nov. 17, 1809, Bennettsville, So. Carolina, d. Sept. 30, 1862, Camden, Ark., son of Leggett & Elizabeth Robinson & bro. of Obedience Robinson). Soon after marriage they moved to Ark.

Child. (10) (g. 18) — Robinson.

Mary Elizabeth, b. Mar. 1, 1832, Chambers Co., Ark., d. June 10, 1928, Monroe, La. m. 1854, Quachita Parish, La., James F. Parker, of Monroe, La. (b. Old Forksville, now Calhoun, La., d. June 15, 1863, Vicksburg, Miss., son of Jefferson T. Parker).

Child. (1 & possibly others) — Parker (g. 19).

William Madison, b. Sept. 21, 1862, Old Forksville, d. Apr. 20, 1928, Monroe. m. June 3, 1906, Christina Simpson, who was b. Nov. 11, 1884, Willspoint, Tex.

Child., Sue Mildred, b. Aug. 29, 1909, West Monroe, La. Res. Nov. 29, 1951, when she sent this data, 810 St. John, Monroe, La. m. Dec. 21, 1932, George Lee Tidwell (b. Mar. 23, 1909, Quachita Parish, La. A Marine in World War II.) Their dau., Terri Sue Tidwell, b. July 12, 1934.

Jane. m. Arch Calhoun.

Luke, d. in Oklahoma.

Lucius, d. unm. in La. in 1917.

Samuel, d. from wound in Civil War.

William, killed in Civil War.

+Martha Arabella, b. 1845. m. 1866, Travis McClendon.

Isabella. m. Mr. Wyatt. No ch.

Ann. m. Jabe Brooks.

Ida. m. Dr. John Fuller, of Quachita Parish, La.

Martha Arabella Robinson (g. 18), Amanda Brooks Lovelace (g. 17), James (g. 16) (1779), William (g. 15) (1747), William (g. 14) (1720), John Baptist (g. 13), etc.

b. Dec. 18, 1845, Atlanta, Ga., d. May 18, 1919, West Monroe, La. m. Sept. 10, 1866, Quachita Parish, La., Travis McClendon (b. Dec. 10, 1836).

Child. (10) (g. 19) — McClendon.

Malla Lilla, b. Dec. 18, 1867. m. (1) Forrest Nixon, a widower, who d. Aug. 1888, and she m. (2) W. L. George.

Child. (1) — Nixon.

Ruth, b. Aug. 16, 1888. m. Pat Hamilton (b. Mar.

29, 1881, s. of Isaac Hamilton). Their ch., Ruth Nixon Hamilton, b. Oct. 2, 1918.

Child. (4) — George.

Mamie, b. Jan. 19, 1900. m. Aug. 8, 1927, Lloyd Boordman, of Quachita Parish, La., & moved to Oklahoma City, Okla., where their ch., Martha Ann Boordman, was b. Dec., 1924.

Fannie Mae, b. 1901. m. Geo. E. Austin, of West Monroe.

Jessie, b. June 30, 1904. m. Wm. Preston Allen. Ch., Wm. P. Allen, Jr.

Robert L., b. Aug. 15, 1906. m. Frankie Malster, of Monroe, La. Had ch., Katherine Alice George.

Anna Bell, b. Feb. 21, 1869. m. Sept. 9, 1901, W. L. Morris.

Child. (4) — Morris.

Irene Carolyn, b. 1902. m. Jan., 1924, Otto Miller. Their ch., Annie Sue Miller, b. Aug. 18, 1924.

Annie Lucile, b. 1904. m. Dec., 1925, Roy Lee.

William Levi, b. 1906. m. 1931, at West Monroe, La., ?.

Mary Elizabeth, b. 1908.

Mattie A., b. Apr. 18, 1870.

Jettie William, b. June 25, 1871, m. Frank Hamilton, their ch. Alva Jack Hamilton, b. 1898, m. Hazel Hellis of Mansfield, La.

Samuel Edwin, b. Mar. 29, 1874, res. 304 Young St., Thomasville, Ga., in June, 1931, when he contributed much of this data. m. July 3, 1907, Baton Rouge, La., Margaret Elizabeth Sherwood Clayton (b. July 14, 1879, Opelika, Ala.).

Child. (4) — McClendon. b. Baton Rouge, La.

Roberine Knox, b. Jan. 29, 1909. Grad. Georgia State College for Women at Milledgeville, Ga., in June, 1930. Director of Girl Scouts at Jacksonville, Ga., in 1931.

Edwin Clayton, b. Feb. 22, 1911.

Travis, b. Nov. 6, 1912.

Margaret Sherwood, b. Sept. 12, 1916.

Travis James, b. Apr., 1876, m. Julia Staples. Res. add.: R.F.D., Baton Rouge, La. 4 McClendon ch. are Dorothy, b. 1907, Grad. La. State Univ., 1930; Staples; Evalyn; Virginia, b. 1920.

Walta, b. June 3, 1878, d. young.

Ira, b. 1880, d. young.

Mary, b. Oct. 3, 1882, d. Apr., 1928, m. Oct., 1902, Jack T. Ellis.

Child. (4) — Ellis.

Jack T., Jr., b. 1904, m. 1923, Rubie Lewis, Catahaula Parish, La.

Wm. Travis, b. Aug., 1908.

Mary Louise, b. Mar., 1910.

Charles, b. July, 1921.

Walter, b. Dec. 14, 1884.

Allen Lovelace (g. 16), William (g. 15) (1747), (g. 14) (1720), John Baptist (g. 13), William (g. 12), Francis (g. 11), William (g. 10), etc.

b. Aug. 20, 1783, Iredell Co., No. Carolina. d. May 25, 1879, Chambers Co., Ala. m. (1) Feb. 22, 1806, Elizabeth Claiborne Barrett (b. Feb. 22, 1785, d. Feb. 20, 1807). m. (2) May 25, 1809, Eleanor Frazier Ramsey (b. Mar. 17, 1790, d. Sept. 11, 1832, Chattehooke, Campbell Co., Ga.).

Child. (9).

1. Wm. Beall, b. Jan. 9, 1807, d. May 21, 1807.

2. Mary Ramsey, b. Mar. 22, 1810, d. Jan. 20, 1857, m. Nov. 24, 1831, Rev. Appleton Haygood.

3. Naomia, b. Oct. 13, 1811, m. July 1, 1838, Columbia, Ga., Geo. McClusky.

4. Wm. Beal, b. Sept. 28, 1813, d. 1840 in Texas, m. Ophelia Frazier.

5. James, b. Mar. 27, 1815.

6. Allen Archibald, b. Sept. 8, 1819. m. Dec., 1842, Margaret Hinkle.

7. John Collins, b. Aug. 30, 1823, m. May 7, 1859, Alberta Christie.

8. Martha Eleanor Emily, b. Aug. 24, 1826, Eufaula, Ala. d. Aug. 13, 1863, Troy, Ala. m. Nov. 17, 1846, Troy, Ala., Charles Wm. Snow, of Boston, Mass. (b. 1813, Bangor, Me., desc. of Hon. Nicholas Snow, a passenger on British ship Ann from London in 1623. He m. Constance Hopkins, a Mayflower passenger.).

Child. (5) — Snow. b. Eufaula, Ala.

a. Charles Henry, b. Oct. 15, 1847, d. July 17, 1903, m. Oct. 15, 1872, Lougenia Wright Scott (b. Oct. 12, 1855, Calhoun, Ga.).

Child. (5) — Snow. b. Delton, Ga.

(1) Henry Edward, b. Sept. 26, 1874, d. Jan. 6, 1931, m. Mar. 16, 1920, Atlanta, Ga., Lallis Brown. Child, Katheryn Snow.

(2) Wm. Wright, b. June 26, 1877, d. Jan. 3, 1937, Fresno, Calif., m. Dec., 1900, Inez Kanner. 3 Snow ch. were William Jr., Harold & Virginia.

(3) Ethel May, b. Dec. 19, 1879, res. 1947, 207 Crawford St., Delton, Ga., when she contributed this data. m. Jan. 22, 1902, Martin Sapp (b. June 7, 1884, d. June 20, 1941).

Child. (4) — Sapp.

A. Ethel Martin, b. Jan. 12, 1903, Grad. Ga. Woman's College, m. Feb. 26, 1945, Wm. B. Farrar.

B. Eugenia Lovelace, b. Oct. 27, 1904, Student Columbia Univ., N. Y. City.

C. Wm. Martin, Jr., b. Dec. 25, 1909, Grad. Georgia Tech.; Major in World War II. m. Sept. 23, 1945, Doris Richard, of Alexandria, La.

D. Dorothy Cecilia, b. June 5, 1915, Grad. Ga. Woman's College.

(4) Eunice Geraldine, b. Aug. 4, 1882.

(5) George Dasher, b. Mar. 25, 1886, m. June 8, 1910, Marilon Reavy. Ch., Eugenia Snow.

b. Jennia M., b. May, 1850, d. Aug. 11, 1888, unm.

c. Emily H., b. ?, d. Jan. 4, 1903, m. James Dasher.

d. Mary Elizabeth, b. Apr., 1856, d. Jan. 4, 1923, m. Daniel Sullivan.

e. Ella A., b. Sept. 4, 1858, d. May 23, 1931, m. in Boston, Mass., her cousin, Charles B. Snow.

9. Welcome Augustus, b. Feb. 4, 1830, m. 1855, Isabella Chartain.

William Lovelace (g. 17), James (g. 16) (1779), William (g. 15) (g. 14) (1720), John Baptist (g. 13).

b. Oct. 5, 1815, Columbia Co., Ga. d. Sept. 12, 1903, Burleson Co., Tex. m. Dec. 21, 1873, Martha Atkinson (b. Feb. 18, 1821, West Point, Ga., d. Jan. 17, 1876, Burleson Co., Tex.).

Child. (9).

1. Caroline Hetner, b. Oct. 29, 1838, d. Sept. 6, 1873, m. (1) 1856, Wm. Alpheus Slay, who d. Sept. 15, 1862, in Battle of Shiloh in Civil War. m. (2), Sept., 1867, Alfred Madison Massingale (b. Oct. 20, 1814, d. July 31, 1874). *Massingale Fam. Hist.* in Dr. S. E. Massingale's book, "The Massengills, & Variants," 1472-1931. In D.A.R. Lib. in Washington, D.C.

Child. (3) — Slay.

James Alpheus; Jane, b. 1859, d. Apr., 1869; Wm. Benj., b. Oct. 10, 1861.

Child. (1) — Massingale.

Mary Deborah, b. June 29, 1869, m. Sept. 13, 1898, Dr. Eugene Patrick McKinney, of Kellyton, Ala. (b. Apr. 15, 1869, d. July 30, 1926, bur. Breckinridge, Tex.).

Child. (1) — McKinney.

Virginia, b. Sept. 21, 1899, res. Oct., 1947, when she sent in this data, 4328 Stanford, Dallas, Tex. m. (1), James Harvey Scott (b. July 14, 1876, d. Jan. 6, 1943). m. (2), Feb. 12, 1944, Myron John Turner (b. Aug. 19, 1902).

2. Benj. Franklin, b. Dec. 1, 1841, d. Mar. 19, 1869, unm., at Sharpourg, Md., in Civil War.

3. Geo. Crawford, b. May 10, 1844, m. Mollie Thorpe. (She m. June 21, 1868, Lummie Massengale.)

Child. (2).

a. Carrie, m. Joe Hubbard.

b. William, m. Ella Pailey Wood.

4. Elizabeth Lane, b. July 29, 1846, m. Elbert Pool.

Child. (5) — Poole.

Verna, m. Mr. Jamerson; William; Earl; George; Mattie, m. McKinney.

5. Mary Jane, b. Nov. 6, 1874, d. Mar. 19, 1869. m. J. C. Massingale. No ch.

6. William Henry, b. Mar. 23, 1852, Coucy Ala., d. Nov., 1939. m. 1875, Milam, Tex., Sarah Goodrum, who d. Jan. 5, 1929.

Child. (7).

John Ray, b. Feb. 19, 1876; Wm. Ernest, b. June 17, 1878; James Smith, b. Apr. 19, 1881, d. June 6, 1884; Benj. Franklin, b. May 3, 1887, served in A.E.F. in World War I; Patrick Henry, b. Jan. 25, 1891; Allen Newton, b. Feb. 13, 1894; Fanny Edith, b. May 4, 1896, m. Mr. Cockrell.

7. Dora Ann, b. Nov. 14, 1855. m. J. N. Pittman, of Roanoke, Randolph Co., Ala. 2 Pittman ch. are James & Mattie.

8. Martha Serena, b. Sept. 18, 1858, d. May 18, 1901, Caldwell, Tex. m. June 19, 1878, Thomas Edgar Jackson (b. May 20, 1858, d. May 18, 1895, Caldwell). She m. (2), J. P. Sparks.

Child. (9) — Jackson — b. Barkenson Co., Tex.

a. Benj. Gabriel, b. Feb. 28, 1880. m. (1), May 8, 1901, Bessie Porter (b. Sept. 20, 1882, d. Sept. 22, 1923, San Marcos, Tex.). m. (2), July 20, 1939, Caldwell, Mary Lane.

Child. (3) — Jackson.

(1) Dora Inez, b. July 1, 1902, d. Jan. 4, 1931, had m. Mr. Phillipps.

(2) Jerrine, b. Mar. 18, 1904. m. 1929, Claude Dailey.

(3) Bennie Grace, b. Dec. 8, 1906. m. Jim Jones. 2 Jones ch.: Jim Jr., b. 1934, d. 1942; and Jerry Ben, b. 1937.

b. Bertha Angeline, b. Feb. 16, 1822, d. 1884.

c. Dora Elizabeth, b. June 3, 1884, d. Apr. 4, 1902.

d. Martha Lillian, b. Apr. 17, 1886, d. Dec. 1, 1938. m. Ben Wade Hill.

Child. (2) — Hill. b. Caldwell, Tex.

(1) Harry Adrian, b. Oct. 2, 1909. m. 1935, Mary Terrell. 2 Hill ch.

(2) Laura Mildred, b. July 20, 1913. m. (1) Clint Lewis. m. (2) Mr. Dresher.

e. Thomas Edgar, Jr., b. Apr. 26, 1888. A.E.F., France, World War I. m. (1) Mabel Porter.

Child. (4) — Jackson.

(1) Blanche Claire, b. 1922. m. 1939, Bob Mechelski.

(2) Bess Marie, b. Nov. 15, 1923. m. 1940, Harry Robertson.

(3) Tommy Elaine, b. 1925.

(4) Dorothy Jane, b. Nov. 10, 1927.

f. Adrian Clifford, b. Aug. 30, 1890. m. Nov. 17, 1912, Mattie T. Phegley (b. Apr. 16, 1891).

Child. (5) — Jackson. b. Caldwell, Tex.

(1) Dorothy, b. Aug. 3, 1913. m. 1933, Beaumont, Tex., Bill Hay.

(2) Tom, b. Nov. 28, 1917, in World War II, Patton's Eighth Army.

(3) Nathaniel, b. July 28, 1919.

(4) John Adrian, b. May 22, 1923.

(5) Margaret, b. 1927.

g. Charley Porter, b. July 2, 1892. m. Nov. 22, 1917, Ruby Lee Boren (b. Nov. 20, 1894).

h. Infant, b. Apr. 9, 1894, d. same day.

i. Annie Mae, b. July 4, 1895, contributed data June 20, 1947. Res. Anderson, Tex. m. July 13, 1917, Nashville, Tenn., Travis W. Jennings (b. Dec. 20, 1885, Grimes Co., Tex.).

Child. (3) — Jennings.

(1) Travis Jackson, b. Apr. 11, 1918. m. Eugene Thompson.

(2) Patricia Ellen, b. Nov. 25, 1924. m. Ira A. Hollister.

(3) Anna Marie, b. May 20, 1931.

9. Thomas Louisa, b. Apr. 4, 1861, d. 1900. m. Geo. Jackson.

Child. (2) — Jackson.

Willie & Ruby.

PART III — MISCELLANEOUS RECORDS.

CHAPTER I — English. Lovelace, Loulace, Loveless, Lovelis, etc. Miscellaneous Eng. Data.

Christopher Lovelace, of Rochester, Co. Kent.

Child. (2).

Anna, m. Oct. 8, 1690, at St. Olive's, Southwards, Surrey, age 18, to Percy Kirke, age 23, of St. Margarett's, Westminster.

Elizabeth, m. Sept. 7, 1698, at St. Mary's Staining, London, age 18, Thos. Houghton of Rochester, Co. Kent, age 23. pp. 157, 230, *Marriage Licenses Faculty of Office of the Archbishop of Canterbury*, London.

Elizabeth Lovelace, of Gosport. m. Feb. 17, 1735, Nathaniel Bateman, of Calne, Co. Wilts. Mariner. p. 50, *Hampshire marriages*, Bishop of Winchester.

Elizabeth Lovelace, dau. of Robert. m. Geo. Style (3rd s. of John Style (of Puddletown, Co. Dorset, m. Joane Bartlett), 1st s. of John Stile of same place, m. Margaret Hay, dau. of Winter Hay of Chetnoll, Co. Dorset). p. 89, *Vis. of Dorsetshire*, 1623, *Har. Soc. Pub.*, vol. 20.

Child. (3) — Style.

John, b. 1622, heir.

Ethelred, dau.

Mary, 2nd dau.

Edith Lovelace, m. Jan. 1, 1671, Joseph Matthews. p. 37.*

Henry Lovelace mentioned in will, dated Dec. 9, 1619, of John Knepp of Micham, Co. Surrey.

Henry Lovelace, of St. Peter Cheape, London citizen

**Register, Chapel of Holy Trinity*, Knights Bridge, 1653-1631. Pub. London by J. Harvey Bloom.

& haberdasher, age 23, m. Nov. 12, 1684, Mrs. Joyce Smith of St. Albans, Wood St., London.

Robert Lovelace, m. July 14, 1674, Jane Wright. p. 53.*

Robert Lisse, m. Dec. 26, 1675, Mary Sparrow. p. 61.*

Thomas Loveless, m. 1717, Buckland, Newton, Eng., Margaret ?. 2 ch. were James, m. Sept. 13, 1751, Christian Symes. He emigrated to Tolpuddle & shortly afterwards to the West Indies, & John, b. 1724/5, m. 1746, Thomasin Gould. He migrated to Tolpuddle in 1741. 2 of his ch. were John, b. 1751, m. Judith Little & had ch. William, Ann, John & Thomas, b. Dec. 25, 1761, m. 1786, Dianna Strickland. Thomas d. Jan. 8, 1838 & Dianna d. July 8, 1809. They had 9 ch., 7 sons & 2 daus., all b. Dorchester, Eng., & including George, b. 1804, m. Elizabeth Hyde. He emigrated to Canada on a sailing vessel called "The Rainbow." We note that unlike all other branches of the family in America, this family came from England later than the descendants of Sir William & must be from an English branch of the same family, presumably the Hurley branch, descended from John (5), bro. of William (5), ancestor of Sir William.

Parish of Hurley, in Berkshire. Respecting the Lovelace Family, long the proprietors & occupiers of Lady Place, they grew rich & powerful & were enobled in reign of Charles I under the title of Lord Lovelace, Baron of Hurley. In the succeeding reign they lived in great splendor. Three ceilings painted by Verrio, probably at the same time with those in Windsor Castle & more particularly the landscapes by Salvator Rosa in the great room, attest the magnificence & wealth of the family. During the short reign of James II private meetings of the leading nobles of the kingdom were held here, in the subterraneous vault under the great hall, for calling in the Prince of Orange — it is said that the principal papers which brought about the Revolution were signed in

the dark recess at the extremity of that vault. After King William obtained the crown he visited Lord Lovelace at Lady Place & descended with him the dark stairs to see the spot. — The principal monument in Hurley Church is that to the memory of 3 of the early Berkshire Lovelaces. — Sir Richard Lovelace, knight in 1625, was a benefactor of Hurley parish. — The Lovelace family connected with Lord King of Ockham & from them descended the R'Honorable Nevil Lovelace, Lord Lovelace, & Lord John Lovelace, ancestor of Lord Byron, the celebrated poet. pp. 161, 177, 185, 187, *The Gentleman's Magazine Library*, ed. by G. L. Gomme, English Topography, 1891.

Geo. & Elizabeth (Hyde) Loveless had 5 ch.: Robert, who m. Anne Scandrett & had 5 daus. & a s. Robert, who d. 1936; Thomas, d. unm., age 80; Louisa, d. age 18 & bur. London Twp., Middlesex Co., Ontario, Canada; Luciana, died of croup on vessel to Canada & bur. at sea; George, had 7 ch., i.e., George, unm., in 1937; Hugh, d. before 1931; Thomas, m. & has ch. Ruth & Geo.; Louisa; Luciana; Bessie; Theda.

"Our branch of the family spell the name Loveless, although I understood from my father that Lovelace is the correct spelling. — The famous Tolpuddle Martyrs, known as the six men of Dorset. They upheld the working men for an increase in wages & were arrested, convicted & sentenced to 7 yrs. transportation across in the high seas to Her Majesty's Penal Settlement in Australia. Public opinion ran so high that long before the 7 yrs. were up they were brot. back to England & honored. 'The Flame of Freedom,' a book written by the late Arthur Henderson, labor leader in Eng., tells of the lives of these men. — My father, Robert Loveless, m. Anne Scandrett & had 6 ch." M. E. Loveless, May 15, 1937 — The Mutual Life Assurance Co. of Canada, 212 McCallum Hill Bldg., Regina, Sask. Home Office Waterloo, Ontario.

The Lovelace House was the scene of many important and dramatic events in the History of the British Empire.

In the crypt were held the secret meetings of the plotters who invited William of Orange to become King of England. A sister of Edward the Confessor is buried nearby. In 1932, Col. C. N. Rivers-Moore, distinguished English Archaeologist, was seeking early relics there.

Mary Amelia Lovelace, m. Daniel Caldwell of White Rock, Nova Scotia — their 9 ch., 23 gr. ch., 27 gr. gr. ch. & his ancestry through 4 gens. shown p. 54, *Wm. Coaldwell (Caldwell) of Mass., Conn.* & *Nova Scotia.* 1910. His sister Mary Caldwell m. John Lovelace (Loveless).

Eliza Loveless, b. 1853, Nova Scotia, m. Oct. 18, 1882, as his 2nd wife, Albert J. Breed (b. Mar. 6, 1840, Boston, d. Apr. 4, 1900, s. of Aaron (7), (6), Amos (5), Jabez (4), complete ancestry shown on p. 142, Vol. I, *The Keayne, etc.*). She was dau. of William & Ruby Loveless.

"Many of our family were Royalists during the Revolution & immigrated to Canada with the British forces. They settled around the Bay of Quinte, in Prince Edward Co., Ontario, & some of their deescendants still live there. The Patriots remained in N. Y. State, but changed the name to Loveless." Geo. S. Lovelace, Atty., Muskegon, Mich., Sept 10, 1926.

Jos. Loveless of Brandon m. Jan. 13, 1808, Sarah Offord, of Sudbury.

Joyce, dau. of Lovelace of Kent, m. as 2nd wife, Wm. Mount or Mounte of Mortlake in Surrey & now of Towne Walling, in Kent. Ch. of John Mounte of Tootinge Gravney, in Surrey, who m. Joane, dau. of Henry Fylen & gr. ch. of John Mounte, who m. a dau. of Holt.

Mary Loveless of Tostock, age 25, m. Oct. 27, 1767, Jonathan Holt of Hadley, Co. Essex.

Mary Loveless of Stepeny, Midd., wid. age 32, m. July 1, 1667, at St. Botolph Aldgate, Lond., Geo. Thorne, age 45.

Mary Lovelasse of city of Westminster, m. Mar. 27, 1604, at St. Margaret Westminster, Christopher Appleton of Hurst. p. 14, Mar. Licenses, Dean, Chap. of West.

Ralph Lovelesse, age 24, of Dorchester, Co. Dorset, m. Feb. 22, 1687/8, at St. Simon's, Southwick, in Surrey, Martha Gerbrandt, age 18, dau. of Samuel Gerbrandt.

Sarah Loveless, age 22, m. Sept. 5, 1782, Wm. Todd of Brisingham, Co. Norf. p. 6, *Allegations of Marriage Licenses*, Archbishop of Sudbury.

Marriages at Tilby, Norfolk Parish Reg., 1912, London. Vol. 7, p. 71 — Thomas Lovelech & Elizabeth Poyne, Nov. 8, 1662; Henry Lovelech & Margery Morrys, June 16, 1566; Henry Lovelech & Jane Kynge, Nov. 11, 1574.

Mary Morton Lovelace, dau. of William & Alice (Barksdale) Lovelace, m. Geo. Edwards Barksdale, M.D. (b. 1869). 3 ch. p. 566, Reed-Reads & Their Relatives, 1930, by Alice Reed. A large 688 p. book, including index.

William Lovelace of Henley, above the Thames, Co. Oxford, child. (2 or more).

Margaret, m. Henry Stoner, of Northstoke, in Co. Oxford, 2nd s. of John Stoner (m. Isabella Agard, dau. of Clementis Agard), 2nd s. of Thomas Agard (m. Sibill, dau. of Sir David Breckmocke, Knight, & Elizabeth Kennesman, who was dau. of Thos. Kennesman & gr. dau. of Stephen Kennesman & Elizabeth Paynell. She was dau. of Johannes Paynell & Margaret Gobion, dau. of Richard Gobion, s. of William Gobion — of Hugo G. — Arincellus G. — Reeus Gobion of Northton), 2nd s. of Thomas Stoner (m. Johanni, dau. of Delapole, Duke of Suffolk), ch. of Thomas Stoner (m. Alicia, dau. of Johannis Kirkby), ch. of Rodolphus Stoner (m. a dau. of Comitis of Ormond), ch. of Edmund Stoner (a dau. of Radulphi Belknappe), ch. of Johannes Stoner (lived 3rd yr. of Reign of Edward III or 1330, m. dau. of Johes Hernshill), ch. of Johannes Stoner (m. dau. of

Lisle). p. 143, *Vis. of Oxford,* 1566, 1574, 1634, *Har. Soc. Pub.,* vol. V — also p. 217.

Child. (3) — Stoner.

Johannes, heir.

Thomas, 2nd s.

Alicia, m. John Ayleward, of Easthampsted in Co. Berks.

Jane or Joan, m. James Annesley of Eynsham, 3rd s. of Henry Annesley (of Uxbridge, Co. Middlesex, Esq., m. Katherine Goure, dau. of Richard Goure, of Chippingnorton in the Co. of Oxford). p. 142, *Vis. of Buckinghamshire, Har. Soc. Pub.,* vol. 58.

Child. (5) — Annesley.

Edmund, heir.

Henry, 2nd s.

John, 3rd s.

Emmanuel.

Elizabeth, m. John Kenne, of Cawfam, Co. Oxford.

William Lovelace, of Kilham, m. Filice Rookes, of Co. Oxan of Hampshire. p. 70, *Vis. of Hampshire.*

William Lovelis, of Tostock, yoeman, m. Jan. 25, 1740, Susanna Woolsey, age 24, dau. of Benj. Woolsey. p. 156, *Allegations of Marriage Licenses,* Archbishop of Sudbury.

"The Lovelace's of Bethersden were connected by blood with numerous distinguished English families who took an active part in colonizing America." pp. 288 & 293, Vol. 17, *Vir. Mag.*

"Two main branches of the Lovelace family figure in Eng. Hist.: the Lovelace's of Bethersden, Kent (with offshoots at Kingsdown, Sittingbourne & Canterbury), & the family of the now extinct barons of Hurley, Berkshire." p. 393, vol. 27, *Vir. Mag.*

There is in Bayford Chancel of Sittingbourne Church, in the north wall, an altar tomb bearing the effigy of a lady who is by tradition said to be a Lovelace.

Lovelace-Arms-Gules; on a chief indented argent 3 martlets Sable.

Crest — On trunk of a tree vert an eagle displayed argent, with Eynsham Arms; azure on a sattire engrailed argent 5 martlets sable. These Arms, Lovelace impaling Eynsham, were put up in Hurley Church in 1558 & are similar to those placed in Bethersden Church in 1591, to the younger son of Sargent Lovelace.

Early Chancery proceedings of Richard II (1385) to Edward IV (1467) show names of John Lovelas; Richard Lovelas; Robert, Thomas & William.

Lovelace Estates were Bethersden, Kent; Faversham, Kent; Bayford Castle or Bayluce in Kingsdown & Hever in Kingsdown, Kent; Goodneston Manor, in Sittingbourne, Kent. Also in Hurley & Berkshire.

Authorities:

Drake's History of Blacksheath Hundred.
Berry's Kentish Genealogies.
Visitation of London, 1633-35 & 1619-21.
Brown's Genesis of the United States.
Collin's Peerage, 1779; 359-383.
N. Y. Gen. & Biog. Records.
Prerogative Courts of Canterbury — Wills.
Amer. Biog. of Literary Men of Eng.
Schwikert — Adventures of English Literature.
Encyclopedia Brittanica.
Hasted's Kent ad 2VII: 489.
C. B. Ellis, Rt. 4, Box 213, Findley, Ohio. Charts loaned me in 1940.
Virginia Magazine.

CHAPTER II—Lovelace, Loveless—Miscellaneous American Records

Unlike the unplaced records of most families which are hopelessly indefinite, these have been proved by many years research and a long process of elimination, to have all descended from the one main Lovelace line — i.e., the children of Sir William Lovelace, of the Virginia Company, who m. Ann Barne. Although any record of a few of the earlier and intermediate generations in America of these families are not found, there is ample proof in both English and American lists of the period that no others of the Lovelace-Loveless name ever came to America. Hence all are of the main descent, as shown in this book.

Sir William Lovelace was of the 9th generation in descent from the first known Lovelace and of the 132nd generation from Adam.

Isaac Loveless. Probably he was the Isaac Loveless who left Maryland & moved to the Carolinas, where his name appears in Union Co. Census of 1830.

"He with family & slaves moved from near Cassville, Barton Co., Georgia, to Chattanooga Co., 2 miles from Summerville, abt. 1853. He & adult sons were good farmers, bo't land & kept adding to it until they were of the richest men in Chattanooga Co. But at the surrender they were stripped of all stock, foodstuff, & slaves. But one of the faithful slaves hid the personal saddle horse of Tempy, dau. of Burlingame Loveless, with which they started anew." (Mrs. W. W. Crawford, Cedartown, Ga., 1936; 1483 Boulevarde, N.E., in 1937.)

The names and locations indicate he was a descendant of John Baptist Lovelace, or assuredly of the same general Lovelace-Loveless line, but exact recorded proof not found. He probably was one of the colonists who for political reasons changed their name from Lovelace to Loveless during the Revolutionary period.

He had bros. Milton, Hazel, Thomas. Milton had daus. Jennie, who m. Col. Rich, and Evelyn Loveless. Hazel m. Linna Riley. Their 8 Loveless ch. were:

1. Martha, m. Gilbert Gholstine. Their dau., Mrs. Charles Bailey, res. 1117 Princeton Ave., Birmingham, Ala.
2. Elizur, m. Calvin Allen.
3. Ebenezer.
4. Greenbury, m. Miss McDaniel.
5. James R., m. Elizabeth Gholstine.
6. Harrison.
7. Mary, m. James Shaw.
8. Nancy, m. Jason Allen.

Thomas had sons Levi (who m. Temperance Jones), & John (who m. Sarah Shockley. They had 10 ch., who married and settled in different parts of the South.) m. (1) Polly Hughes.

Child. (13).

+1. Nathaniel, b. 1798. m. 1823, Rachael De Weese.
2. Emory, d. young.
+3. Blessingame, b. 1806. m. 1827, Cynthia Kay.
4. Joseph, d. unm.
5. James, a hopeless paralytic all his life.
6. Isaac, Jr., m. Sally Hipp.
7. John H., d. unm. at Summersville, Ga. His mother resided with him.
8. Sallie, m. James B. Hall.
9. Lennie, m. William Denson.

Child. (2) — Denson.

a. Lennie, d. unm. at the Loveless home place of her uncle, John H. Loveless, abt. 1926.

b. Sarah, m. Sam Abrams (half bro. of Casper Abrams, who m. Mattie Loveless (1848), Blessingame (1806).

Child. (7) —Abrams.

(1) Alice, m. her 2nd cousin, Robert Loveless, s. of

Blessingame & Cynthia (Kay) Loveless. 5 child. p. 115.

(2) Ella, m. Will Dorsett.

(3) and (4) William & John, twins who d. young.

(5) Liela.

(6) Sam.

(7) Sally, m. her 3rd cousin, Bob Mooney, s. of Penecia (Loveless) Mooney & gr. s. of Nathaniel Loveless (1798), res. (1908) Penecia Mooney Homestead, R.F.D., Adriansville, Ga.

10. Minnie, m. Mr. Shettles.

11. Polly, d. unm.; lived with brother, John H. Loveless.

12. Tempie, d. unm.

13. Elizabeth, m. Archie Johnson. Res. Summersville, Ga.

Child. (3) — Johnson: Lizzie & Tom, who d. unm.; Albert, whereabouts unknown or whether living, in 1936.

Nathaniel Loveless, Isaac (m. Polly Hughes).

b. 1798, d. 1848, age 50, bur. Cassville, Ga.

m. 1823, Rachael De Weese (b. 1800, d. 1857, age 57, & bur. with husband, dau. of Samuel & Mary De Weese & descended from Garrett Hendrick De Weese, who came from Holland to N. Y. in 1688 & moved to Philadelphia, Pa., in 1690).

Child. (8).

1. Alfonso De Weese, b. 1824, d. 1852, age 26, on ocean trip to California.

2. Nancy Elizabeth, b. Mar. 20, 1826, d. Jan. 19, 1891. m. Oct. 15, 1851, as his 2nd wife, John Lewis Smith (b. Nov. 15, 1808, d. Jan. 25, 1872).

Child. (8) — Smith.

a. Nancy Elizabeth, b. May 10, 1853. m. Dec. 11, 1871, Sam Clark Smith.

Child. (6) — Smith

(1) Imogene, b. 1872, d. 1908. m. Warren Gaston.

(2) Samuel Clark, Jr., b. 1874. m. Miss Smith.

(3) Mary, b. 1878, d. 1932. m. (1) Virgil Smith; m. (2) Jack Hightman; m. (3) Melvin Owens.

(4) Frank, b. 1880. m. Pauline ?.

(5) Shepard, b. 1882.

(6) Lucy, b. 1884. m. (1) Carlton Tedder; m. (2) Melvin Owens.

b. Dora Jane, b. May 17, 1855. Res. 1936, Decatur, Ga. m. Jan. 16, 1873, Thomas Lockridge (b. Jan. 19, 1852, d. Oct., 1926).

Child. (7) — Lockridge.

(1) Thomas J., b. Aug. 15, 1874. m. Neva Taff. 3 Lockridge ch. are: Gladys, b. Sept. 21, 1901, d. Sept. 21, 1902; Herbert Thomas, b. Apr. 4, 1903, m. Ruby McHugh; Charles, b. July 15, 1905.

(2) Charles J., b. May 12, 1876, d. 1925, m. 1899, Ida Harris. 3 Lockridge ch. are Glenn, b. 1901, d. 1902; Louise, b. 1906, m. Robert Gray Nixon; Harris, b. 1909.

(3) Gertrude, b. Feb. 28, 1878, res. (1936), 405 9th St., N.E., Atlanta, Ga., m. Oct. 11, 1900, Forest Eugene Kibler (b. June 29, 1870). She sent data.

Child. (5) — Kibler.

A. Robert Eugene, b. Nov. 4, 1901, m. 1930, Louise Anderson.

B. Mildred Lee, b. Oct. 1, 1904, m. Aug. 29, 1925, De Witt P. Dowdle.

C. Thomas Lockridge, b. Jan. 9, 1908, d. 1912.

D. Katheryn Klare, b. Sept. 10, 1909.

E. Marion Lois, b. May 20, 1913.

(4) Lydia, b. Jan. 25, 1880, res. (1936), Tampa, Fla., m. 1901, Oliver Layton.

(5) Mary Lee, b. May 24, 1882, m. (1) Alex Weber, m. (2) Fred A. Rice. 3 Rice ch.: Fred A., Jr., b. 1916; Eugenia Maxine, b. 1918; Forest, b. 1924.

(6) Jesse Smith, b. 1884, d. 1893.

(7) Cora Belle, b. May 12, 1886, m. 1902, Harvey N. Weatherby. 3 Weatherby ch.

c. Thomas G., b. 1856, d. 1862.

d. James Nathan, b. May 8, 1859, m. Jane Taff. 2 Smith ch.

e. F. V., b. May 19, 1861, res. (1936) Cartersville, Ga., m. Fannie Layton. 7 Smith ch.

f. Martha Alice, b. Aug. 19, 1864, m. Dec. 25, 1881, Burton Edward Morgan.

Child. (6) — Morgan.

(1) Clinton Edward, b. Dec. 14, 1882, m. May 8, 1904, Lena Dukes.

(2) Susan Alice, b. Sept. 25, 1884, m. Apr. 25, 1911, Charles A. Lankin.

(3) Nellie Mary, b. Dec. 10, 1886, m. June 29, 1909, Rev. Robert Lankin.

(4) Robert Herman, b. July 8, 1890, d. 1892.

(5) Nancy Pearl, b. Oct. 25, 1894, m. Apr. 5, 1924, R. D. Kelly.

(6) Dolly Burt, b. Dec. 25, 1896, m. Feb. 19, 1918, Forest C. Powell.

g. Abner Lee, b. Oct. 15, 1866, m. 1895, Mamie Murchism. 6 Smith ch.

h. Lulu May, b. May 25, 1870, m. Ruben H. Ferguson. 3 Ferguson ch.

3. E. Permecia, b. Sept. 27, 1828, d. Dec. 24, 1907, m. (1) Mr. Mooney, m. (2) Mr. Christansen. 1 ch., Bob Mooney, m. Sally Abrams.

4. Sarah Eunice, b. 1831, m. Mr. Jones.

5. Jonathan Van Buren De Weese, b. 1833, d. 1892, unm.

6. William Magee, b. July 16, 1836, d. Oct. 20, 1915, m. Mrs. Kate J. (Hargis) Banton.

Child. (3).

a. Robert, b. 1869, d. 1876.

b. Harry, b. 1870, d. 1873.

c. Fenton Milton, b. Nov. 5, 1872, m. Oct. 23, 1912, Montgomery, Ala., Mrs. Annie (Clanton) Due. Res.: 525

St. Charles St., N.E., office 1520 Chandler Bldg., Atlanta, Ga., in 1931, when he sent data.

7. Louisa Josephine Brown, b. 1838, d. 1892, unm.

8. Harrison Abner, b. 1840, d. 1910, m. Mrs. Mary (Lockridge) Johnson. No ch.

Blessingame Loveless (Lovelace), Isaac (m. Polly Hughes). b. Sept. 27, 1806, d. 1883, Chattanooga, Ga., 2½ miles from Summersville. He came to Alabama from South Carolina. m. Dec. 20, 1827, Cynthia Kay (b. Mar. 26, 1811, d. abt. 1880).

Child. (10).

1. Mary Catherine, b. Oct. 4, 1828, d. unm.

2. Mary, b. Mar. 26, 1830, m. Pink Drummond.

3. John Milton, b. Jan. 16, 1832, d. (killed in Civil War), m. Nancy Lumkins.

4. Thomas Jahue, b. Apr. 15, 1836, d. of exposure in Civil War, m. Elizabeth Loveless.

5. Tempa Elizabeth, b. Sept. 13, 1840, m. (1) Bill Tallent, m. (2) Mr. Blalock.

6. Sara Adeline, b. May 24, 1843, m. Geo. Tyler. No ch.

7. Martha Emeline, b. Dec. 15, 1845, m. Casper Abrams, half bro. to Sam Abrams, father-in-law of Robert Bailey Loveless. They moved to Arkansas.

Child. (3) — Abrams.

a. Joseph, res. R.F.D. Conway Park, Ark.

b. Willard.

c. Annie, m. Bill Day, Greenbrier, R.F.D., Ark.

+8. Nancy Ann or Nannie, b. May 9, 1848, m. Apr. 7, 1866, John Horan.

+9. Robert Bailey, b. 1849, m. N. Alice Abrams, his second cousin.

+10. Lydia Sophronia, b. 1852, m. 1872, Geo. Parker.

Nancy Ann Loveless, Blessingame (1806), Isaac (m. Polly Hughes). b. May 9, 1848, celebrated her 89th birthday May 10, 1936, when she res. with dau., Mrs. Crawford, at 128 Philpot St., Cedartown, Ga. m. Apr. 7, 1866, Nashville, Tenn., John Horan (b. at Mt. Rath, near Dublin, in Ireland).

Child. (8) — Horan — b. Nashville, Tenn.

1. Joseph Robert, b. Aug. 24, 1867, d. Aug. 7, 1868.
2. Mary Ann, b. Jan. 17, 1869, d. Nov. 18, 1881.
3. Annastasia, b. Nov. 27, 1870. Res. (1937), 1483 Borelevarde N.E., Atlanta, Ga., when she contributed data. m. (1) July 5, 1888, Dalton, Ga., John Adrian Rudolph, d. 1894, s. of Arthur Rudolph & Savannah Davis. A direct descendent of Crown Prince Rudolph of Germany & 1st or 2nd cousin of President Garfield's wife. m. (2) Dec. 28, 1898, William Webster Crawford. Res. (1936), 128 Phelps St. s. of Wm. David & Josephine (Garner) Crawford of Buford, Ga. The Garner family was among the first settlers of Buford, before it was a township, & they were a great factor in its development.

Child. (1) — Crawford.

a. Louisa, b. May 10, 1913, m. June 1, 1930, Wm. Robert Busby (s. of Robert & Edna (Everell) Busby).

Child (1) — Busby.

(1) William Good, b. Feb. 28, 1931.

4. Lena, b. Apr. 27, 1873, d. Mar. 31, 1875.
5. Frances Alexandria, b. Apr. 7, 1876, d. Sept., 1878.
6. Lillian May, b. Aug. 3, 1879, Cleveland, Tenn. Res. (1936), 503 W. 11th St., Rome, Ga. m. Nov. 13, 1904, Cedartown, Ga., Wm. Lowndes Yancey (b. Mar. 7, 1877, Atlanta, Ga., s. of Goodloe & Lucy Graton (Dupree) Yancey). Lucy Dupree was b. in France. Wm. Yancey was the gr. s. of Wm. Lowndes Yancey, one of the South's greatest (called silver tongued) orators, before the Civil War & a strong advocate of secession.

Child. (1) — Yancey.

(1) Wm. Lowndes, Jr., Sept. 22, 1905, Christianburg, Va. m. June 28, 1932, Annie Stroude of Rome, Ga. (b. Nov. 23, 1904, dau. of Dick C. & Patty (Montgomery) Stroude).

7. John Colbert, b. June 3, 1882. Res. (1936), 121 Forest Ave., Gadsden, Ala. m. Nov. 2, 1913, Cedartown, Ga., Tommie Lee Queen (b. Apr. 21, 1892, dau. of Adolphus & Eula (Bell) Queen, both of whom were b. in 1868).

Child. (2) — Horan — b. Cedartown.

a. Virginia Queen, b. Sept. 6, 1914. m. Jan. 1, 1933, James Seldon Smith (b. 1912, s. of Rev. Carl G. & Estella Smith).

b. John Colbert, Jr., b. Sept. 19, 1919.

8. William Sinclair, b. Mar. 8, 1888, Dalton, Ga. Res. (1936), 503 W. 11th St., Rome, Ga. m. Oct., 1912, Sherman, Tex., Florence Perry (b. 1892 in Ohio, dau. of Ed. & Fannie (Anderson) Perry & gr. dau. of Major Anderson, who won fame at battle of Fort Sumter).

Child. (3) — Horan.

a. George Parks, b. July 1, 1913, Sherman, Tex.

b. Paul William, b. Oct. 4, 1915, Dallas, Tex.

c. Dorris, b. Sept. 4, 1923, Rome, Ga.

Robert Bailey Loveless, Blessingame (1806), Isaac (m. Polly Hughes). b. May 10, 1849. m. Nov. 4, 1875, his 2nd cousin, Nancy Alice Abrams (b. Aug. 19, 1857, dau. of Sam Abrams & Sarah Denson, gr. dau. of Lennie Loveless & Wm. Denson & gr. gr. dau. of Isaac Loveless & Polly Hughes).

Child. (5).

1. Charles Monroe, b. Oct. 14, 1876. Res. (July 20, 1936, when he sent this data), R.F.D. 1, Jamestown, Alabama. m. Apr. 17, 1901, Boomtown, Ala., Edna Heath.

Child. (6).

a. Frank Edward, b. Nov. 29, 1903. m. July 17, 1933, Bernice Chowder.

b. James Paul, b. Mar. 3, 1906. Unm. in 1936.

c. Clifford, b. July 17, 1908. Unm. in 1936.

d. Avis Maria, b. Jan. 18, 1913. m. Mar. 15, 1936, Eric Moseley.

e. Mozell, b. July 10, 1918.

f. Melba Sue, b. Feb. 22, 1924.

2. Albert Arthur, b. Oct. 3, 1879. Unm. in 1936.

3. Annie Lee, b. Aug. 18, 1885. m. Oct. 30, 1905, W. L. Farrow.

Child. (2) — Farrow.

a. Claude, b. Apr. 10, 1908.

b. Roy, b. Nov. 3, 1911.

4. Mary Elizabeth, b. Nov. 3, 1889. Unm. in 1936.

5. Lillie May, b. Aug. 9, 1896. m. Aug. 7, 1915, Horace G. C. Pickle.

Child. (4) — Pickle.

a. Robbie, b. May 6, 1917.

b. Donald, b. May 11, 1919.

c. G. C., b. Jan. 8, 1931.

d. Max, b. Oct. 28, 1935.

Lydia Sophronia Loveless, Blessingame (1806), Isaac (m. Polly Hughes). b. Oct. 27, 1852, d. Dec. 18, 1922. m. Nov. 3, 1872, George W. Parker (b. Dec. 3, 1846, d. May 8, 1905, s. of Reuben & Annie (Key) Parker. Annie Key was of Irish descent).

Child. (7) — Parker.

1. Perry Peasley, b. Sept. 27, 1873. Res. (1936, when he gave this data to Mrs. Crawford, Blanche, Ala.), P.O. address, R.F.D. 1, Jamestown, Ala. m. Jan. 29, 1899, Annie Lewis (d. Mar. 1, 1936, dau. of Jim & Alphenetta (Owens) Lewis & of Welsh descent).

Child. (2) — Parker.

a. Leila Pearl, b. Dec. 5, 1899. m. Dec. 20, 1930, S. P. Spear, ch. of James & Mattie (Piper) Spear.

b. Tolly Webb, b. Aug. 7, 1903. m. Jan. 26, 1926, Bertha Aarousburg, of German parentage.

2. U. R., b. Oct. 5, 1875, d. young.

3. Annie Louella, b. June 2, 1878. m. May, 1899, Jim Sperkes, s. of Wm. & Mary (Clark) Sparks.

Child. (3) — Sparks.

a. Dolus, res. Tampa, Fla. m. Winnie Lewis. 1 ch., Arnella Sparks.

b. Roy, unm. in 1936.

c. Cecil.

4. Mary Etta, b. Mar. 29, 1880. m. O. C. Campbell, s. of Callet & Viola (Fanibro) Campbell.

Child. (7) — Campbell.

a. Tracy, m. Check Binner.

b. Grace, m. Hobart Hartline.

c. Harry, m. Wanie Jones.

d. Hazel, m. Homer Nartline.

e. R. C., m. Louise Butler.

f. Bonnie, m. Dick Palmer.

g. Mildred, m. J. C. Mitchell.

5. George Walter, b. July 21, 1882. m. Eleanor Hutt, dau. of Wm. Hutt. 1 ch., Jean Parker, b. 1923.

6. Robert Wiley, unm. in 1936.

7. Erma Sophronia, b. Feb. 4, 1886, d. young.

James Loveless:

His exact birth date and parentage not proven, but place of residence and similarity of 1st names of children suggest he was closely related to Isaac Loveless, who m. Polly Hughes.

He died Greenville Co., So. Carolina, in 1846, leaving 12 children. His will implies he had had a 1st wife, mother of his "older children." He mentions surviving wife, Lenna, who was to inherit certain slaves and at her death they were to go to her children: Jas. T.; Mary; Ruth and Lenna Jr. (m. Wm. Nixon). Other ch. were Jesse; Levi, a Baptist minister who had a wife named Temperance ?, res. 1846, Gwinet

Co., Ga.; Thomas, res. 1846, Campbell Co., Ga.; Hazzle, res. 1846, Catossa Co., Ga.; William, res. 1846, De Kalb Co., Ga.; Allen, res. 1846, Marshall Co., Alabama (he could have been the Allen Loveless who m. Roxana Hughes. p. 160); Elizabeth (m. Peter Crawford), res. 1846, Winston Co., Ala.; +John (m. Clarissa Williamson).

John Loveless (James):

He d. 1840. Had m. Clarissa Williamson of Laurens District, So. Carolina. Their 8 Loveless ch. were Williamson, m. (1) Mary Boman, m. (2) Emma ?; Mire, m. Benneville Spotts; Elizabeth, m. George McGhee; Laura, m. Alfred G. Russell; Cassa Victoria, m. Fleming Culver; John, Jr.; Clarissa, m. Dr. Garlington Caker; +James Henry.

James Henry Loveless, m. Rosalia Fair Kelley. Their 3 ch. were Conway, d. Dec. 27, 1869, age 7 yrs.; Henry, d. Nov. 22, 1941, unm.; Laura Vivian (b. Aug. 16, 1864, d. Jan. 2, 1934, m. James Houston Hunt, who was b. Mar. 10, 1864, d. Jan., 1947).

3 Hunt ch.:

a. Jesse Malvern, m. Amelia Louise Jones.

3 Hunt ch.:

(1) Mildred, m. Wm. Anderson Steward. They have 1 dau., Millie Andrew Stewart.

(2) Margaret.

(3) Joann.

b. Henry Franklin, m. Ruby Mae Cooper. Their 4 Hunt ch. are:

(1) Edwin F., m. Doris Balcher, have 1 son, Eddie Hunt.

(2) Norwood Ehn, m. Mary Jo Coleman, have 1 dau., Patricia Hunt.

(3) J. H., m. Vera Gregory.

(4) Betty Carolyn.

c. Laura Vivian (she res. 614 McCaniel Ave., Green-

ville, S. C., Nov., 1951, when she sent in this data), m. Geo. E. Williams. One son, James Earl Williams, who m. Ruth Hawkins, & they have 1 dau., Vivian Earle Williams.

Descent from Isaac Newton Loveless to Owen Robert Loveless:

Isaac Newton Loveless, m. approx. 1767 near Salisbury, North Carolina. m. 1791 to ?, approx. 1812 to Susanah Cox. d. December 16, 1847.

Children:

1. Isaac Newton Loveless, Jr.
+2. John, b. abt. 1795.
3. Winnie.
4. Billy.
5. Josiah.
6. Dilla.
7. Joe Henry.

(By second wife):

8. Luke.
9. Susie.
10. Lucinda.
11. Jacob.
12. Elizabeth Ann.
13. Elija.
14. Jim.

John Loveless, b. approx. 1795 (near Rumble, Indiana). d. (near Rumble, Ind.).

Children:

1. Johnathan Loveless.
2. Henry.
3. Edith (Edy).
+4. Isaac, b. Dec. 25, 1828.
5. Eli.
6. Hense.
7. Riley.
8. Anna.

Isaac Loveless, b. Dec. 25, 1828 (near Rumble, Ind.). m. Elizabeth Rumble (b. Mar. 16, 1834; d. Apr. 6, 1879) & (2) Malinda Grub. He d. Sept. 4, 1911 (near Rumble, Ind.).

Children — 1st wife, Elizabeth:

1. Perry, b. Sept. 17, 1851.
2. John.
3. Amanda.
4. Alex.
5. Wesley.
6. Daniel.
7. Eli.
8. Edward.

Children — 2nd wife, Malinda:

9. Mose.
10. Will.
11. Daisy Ann.
12. Rufus.
13. Clarence.
14. Goodlet Morgan.
15. Minnie.
16. Marion.

Perry Loveless, b. Sept. 17, 1851 (near Rumble, Ind.). m. (1) Mary Ward, b. Jan. 14, 1857, d. Mar. 27, 1877 (no issue); m. (2) Virginia Miller, b. 1853, d. 1893; m. (3) Molly Sims (no issue); m. (4) Elizabeth ?, (no issue). d. 1930.

Children — 2nd wife.

+1. Harvey Loveless, b. May 4, 1880, m. Nettie Brown.
2. Laura L.
3. Amy I. Xenia.
4. Wesley Bruner.
5. Jasper.

6. Perry Ottice.
7. Grandiville.

Harvey Loveless, b. May 4, 1880 (near Rumble, Ind.). m. Sept. 21, 1910, to Nettie Brown.

Children:

1. Winifred, b. July 24, 1911, d. July 26, 1911.
+2. Owen Robert, b. Dec. 30, 1913.
3. Wayne David, b. Sept. 25, 1920.

(From Owen Robert Loveless, 1125 White St., Ann Arbor, Mich., Mar. 17, 1951.)

William Lovelace: By family tradition he was the son of a Revolutionary soldier. Had a bro., Alfred, who went to Texas at a very early date. He had a gr. gr. son, Roby Lovelace, who served in First World War and has since d. in Portland, Oregon. Their home was formerly Grangerville, Idaho. William also had a brother George who was a physician in Penn. betwn. 1830 & 1850. The family had lived in York Co. & Northumberland Counties before settling in Cherry Tree, Pa. He is probably the William Lovelace bur. Oakland Cemetery (largest cemetery in Indiana Co., Pa.), as reported by Frances Strong Helman, whose husband was caretaker thereof in 1948. He m. Margaret Long, dau. of Thomas Long. Margaret d. 1862.

Child. (13). From incomplete and much worn copy of Family Bible owned by Horace W. Lovelace, of 25 Penn St., Montgomery, Pa., a gr. gr. gr. son of above.

1. William, b. July 19, 1781.
2. Margarette, b. Mar. 18, 1789, prob. d. before 1823.
3. Mariah, b. Feb. 7, 1807.
4. Homer, b. Jan. 13, 1809.
5. Harmon, called "Sr." which would imply another & younger Harmon in family. b. Feb. 22, 1813, d. abt. 1892, Cottonwood, Minn., m. Mar. 23, 1834, Margaret Myers

(b. Nov. 7, 1809, d. abt. 1891, Marshall, Minn., dau. of Jacob Myers).

Child. (9) — b. Cherry Tree, Indiana Co., Pa.

a. Elizabeth, b. Mar. 19, 1835, m. Daniel House. No ch.

b. Beolia, b. Feb. 9, 1837, d. Marshall, Minn. m. Zenas Rank. 2 Rank ch. were: Elizabeth Lovelace, b. 1861, a teacher & for many years librarian at the Carnegie Library, d. 1937, unm.; Samuel, b. 1866, d. unm.

c. William De La, b. Oct. 30, 1839, d. 1924. m. Jan. 21, 1869, Mercy A. Taber, who d. Mar. 13, 1921. He was a soldier in the famous Minnesota First that turned Pickett's charge at Gettysburg. A teacher, farmer, newspaperman & member of Masonic Lodge.

Child. (5).

(1) Luzerne, b. Mar. 23, 1871, d. Billings, Mont. m. Abraham Dunton.

(2) Ellen, b. Nov. 10, 1873. m. Mr. Dunton, bro. of Abraham.

(3) Ralph C., b. May 14, 1876, d. Dec. 21, 1945, Valley City, North Dakota. m. (1) June 12, 1902, Mrs. Susan Frances Shortt, who d. July 19, 1943, & he m. (2) Dec. 24, 1944, Mrs. Bettie Reid, who was twice a widow.

Child. (2) — b. Minneapolis, Minn.

Mercy Arlene, b. Feb. 15, 1907, m. June 4, 1929, Ernest D. Petersen, & has 2 Petersen ch., i.e., Audrey Johanna, b. June 6, 1931, & Arlene Elizabeth, b. Apr. 24, 1937. Oct. 22, 1948, she wrote of her father, Ralph C. Lovelace: "He was a grand person; possessed lots of personality & had scores of friends. He was a devout Christian & a loving father & grandfather who left a heritage of character we are proud to possess." Res.: Henning, Minn.

Gordon Francis, b. Apr. 6, 1914, living unm. in 1948.

(4) Mark, b. Jan. 15, 1879, d. Aug., 1946.

(5) Lauren Harmon, b. May 13, 1893, res. 2615 F St., San Diego, Calif.

d. Martha Jane, b. Sept. 4, 1841, m. Mr. Russell. Their son, Herman Russell, M.D., res. St. Paul, Minn. A practicing physician there and in Minneapolis.

e. Mary Ellen, b. May 7, 1844, m. Clinton Pierce. Several child., including Eugene, who d. Dec., 1947; one, a dentist; a dau. who m. a Baptist minister.

f. Rachel Emma, b. Dec. 26, 1847, d. July 17, 1848.

g. Alfred, b. Nov. 25, 1850, d. Jan. 19, 1857.

h. Julia or Judith, b. Mar. 26, 1852. m. Louis Woodworth. 2 ch.

i. Charles Sumner, b. Apr. 28, 1857, d. Dec. 1, 1930, Grangeville, Ida. m. Aug. 25, 1887, at Castlewood, now Haytie, Hamlin Co., South Dakota, Ada Blanche Humphrey (b. Apr. 27, 1868, dau. of Adrian A. & Cordelia J. (Cole) Humphrey). As Mrs. Blanche Tallinger in 1948 she res. 145 Warm Springs, Boise, Idaho, and contributed much of this data. Their 5 ch. were Adrian, Harmon, & Biolia, who all d. young; Irene Mae, b. June 20, 1890, res. 1646 Sutter St., San Francisco, Calif.; Maurine Blanche, b. Aug. 10, 1900, m. July 1, 1920, Seattle Wash., Neil Huntley Peterson. Res.: No. 2, 18th Ave., San Francisco. Their dau., Le Neil Lovelace Peterson, m. Capt. David Starr York.

6. Elizabeth, b. May 25, 1815.

7. George Washington, b. Apr. 17, 1817, d. Aug. 23, 1882. Of Cherry Tree twp. Sold land July 31, 1863 & Nov. 20, 1868, Indiana Co., Pa., records. m. (1) Elizabeth Metzler. No ch. m. (2) Sarah Taylor. Ch.: Catherine, William & Luther. m. (3) before Nov. 20, 1868, when her name appeared on deed, Mrs. Margaret Jane McCormick. Ch. were: a. "Dr." Elizabeth, m. Dr. Wm. Pickett & had son, Wm. Pickett. Res. Springfield Rd., Alden, Pa.; b. Cora, res. with sister Elizabeth; c. Albert, m. 3 times, res. Washington, D.C.; d. Horace McCormick Lovelace, b. 1866, Cherry Tree. Res., 1948, 410 Park Ave., Williamsport, Pa. His son Robert m. Iva Wood. She wrote from this address & stated the first ch. b. in Cherry Tree was in 1830, proving all

of William's children were b. elsewhere. They have 3 ch.: Horace, Jr., Robert, Jr., & Dorlene, who m. Hugh Lackey & res. 68 Forrester St., S.W., Washington, D.C.

8. Rachael, b. Aug. 4, 1819, m. David McCullen. 4 McCullen ch. were: a. Bruce; b. George; c. Harmon; & d. Samuel.

9. Joseph, b. Aug. 13, 1821.

10. Mary Margaret, b. Aug. 14, 1823. m. 1848, Luther Myer (b. 1811, N. J., s. of Jacob & Martha (Fassett) Myer). 4 Myer ch. were: a. George; b. Ambrose (a medical student); c. Rachael; and d. Clinton. Caldwell's *History of Indiana Co., Pa.*, 1880.

11. Abraham R., M.D., b. Aug. 28, 1826, York, York Co., Pa. He grad. Jefferson Medical College, first practiced in Lewisberg, York Co., thence Cherry Tree. In 1878 he located in Pine Flat, a village in Cherry Tree Twp. m. twice & had ch.: a. Joseph (res. in Calif); b. Robert (m. Nettie E. Crowther); c. Emma (m. John Davis); d. Elizabeth; e. Frank; f. Elsie, who res. Jersey Shore, Pa.

12. Alfred, b. Jan. 16, 18 ?. (Alfred C. Lovelace & wife Jane sold land Aug. 31, 1865.)

13. Stephen, b. Apr. 18, 18 ?. Res. West. Va.

Polly Loveless, of Castleton, Vt. m. Dec. 5, 1816, Neodiah Adams (b. Dec. 2, 1786, at Poultney, Vt., 7th ch. of Samuel Adams (b. Sept. 28, 1744, Canterbury, Conn. m. Nov. 5, 1772, Rachel Burrill, who was b. Oct. 1, 1753, d. Dec. 25, 1828), ch. of Joseph Adams (b. May 25, 1707, Canterbury, Conn. m. (2) Apr. 2, 1742, Dorothy Hyde, dau. of Jonathan & Dorothy (Kidder) Hyde), 2nd ch. of Joseph Adams (b. Aug. 25, 1668, Medfield, d. Dec. 9, 1748, Canterbury. m. abt. 1690, Mary Davenport, dau. of Charles Davenport of Dorchester, Mass.), 9th ch. of Peter Adams (b. 1622, Eng., settled in Medfield in 1652, frm. Braintree, Mass. m. Rachael ?), 5th ch. of Henry Adams (b. abt. 1583, Eng., d. Oct. 6, 1646. m. Edith Squire), 4th ch. of John Adams

(b. abt. 1555, m. abt. 1576, Agnes Stone), ch. of Henry Adams, b. abt. 1531. m. 1554, pos. Rose ?), ch. of John A., b. abt. 1500, m. Alice ?. From *Henry Adams, of Somersetshire, Eng.*, & *Braintree, Mass.*, 1927, & *A Genealogical History of Henry Adams*, 1898, p. 330.

Mortimer Nathan Loveless m. Josephine Wheeler. s. Delos Wheeler, b. Dec. 2, 1894, Brainerd, Minn. Served in the 88th Division of the U. S. Army during World War I. A noted author & has been on the staff of the N. Y. Sun since 1928. m. Nov. 29, 1917, Maude Hart, a noted author & writer in her own right.

Hon. Alfred M. Lovelace, whose ancestry goes back to the Colonial settlement of Lovelace family in Vir. during the Cromwell period of Eng. Civil Wars. m. Anna Wilkins. s. Dr. Thomas Claude, b. Oct. 28, 1889, Mooresboro, Cleveland Co., North Carolina. He grad. Medical College of Virginia in Richmond, served in World War as First Lieutenant in Medical Corps. Moved to Henrietta, North Carolina, where now a surgeon. m. Mathie M. Whismont. Ch., Martha Jane.

Jesse Crenshaw Loveless, "of Eng. descent," s. of Jesse Butler & Mary P. (Wynth) Loveless, merchant & planter, b. June 17, 1867, Marion, Ala. Grad. Howard College of Marion, prosperous business man. Vice Pres. & Gen. Mgr. John A. Denies Son's Co., in Memphis, Tenn.

Joseph Loveless (13), ancestors "from Eng." m. prob. Mary ?. p. 179. Had "2 girls & 5 boys," including Richard (14), who m. a Patterson. He had "3 girls living somewhere in New Jersey" in 1943 & s. Joseph, b. May 27, 1877, near New Egypt, N. J. m. 1897, Ann Ellen Dickinson (b. Sept. 13, 1879), s. Willett W. Lovelace, res., May 8, 1943, when he sent this data, 327 Kathmere Rd., Brookline, Del. Co., Pa. He b. Nov. 2, 1906. m. Louella Mae Gallagher.

Mary Anna Loveless, m. 1873, Alexander Shreve, b. Oct. 2, 1812, s. of Alexander Shreve (b. Mar. 3, 1769, d. Dec. 4, 1854, m. Mary Earl, who was b. May 25, 1767, Springfield, N. J., d. Dec. 12, 1843. 7th ch. of Tanton Earl), ch. of Joshua Shreve, of Wrightstown, N. J., Tanton Earl (b. Mar. 9, 1731, d. Oct. 24, 1807, m. Mary Haines), ch. of Thomas Earl (b. ?, d. 1778, m. Sept. 6, 1727, Mary Crispin) (b. May 12, 1705, dau. of Silas Crispin), ch. of Wm. & Elizabeth Earl, ch. of Wm. & Mary Walker Earl, ch. of Ralph & Joan Earl fr. Exeter, Eng. p. 80, *Earl Family*, Ralph Earl, 1888.

Charles Loveless, b. 1801, d. 1881, m. 1826, Caroline Reed (b. 1807, d. 1889, dau. of Enoch & Abijah (Cobb) Reed & gr. dau. of Simeon & Abigail (Rice) Reed). Her brother, Curtis Edgerton Reed, m. Polly B. Loveless (Lovelace), dau. of Daniel D. Lovelace (b. 1799), John (b. 1760), John (gen. 13), John (12), Edward (11), Gov. Francis (10), Sir William (9), etc. *Reed-Read Lineage*, Wright.

Sylvester Loveless, d. Apr., 1840, m. 1830, Marietta Reed (b. 1810, dau. of Eliakim Reed & gr. dau. of Simeon & Abigail (Rice) Reed, who was 5th in descent from John Reed, immigrant ancestor), b. 1633, Cornwall, Eng. *Reed-Read Lineage*, by Wright, continues their descendants and shows complete Reed ancestry.

William Randolph Lovelace, a very famous surgeon in World War II, b. Springfield, Mo., Dec. 30, 1907, s. of Edgar Blaine & Jewel (English) Lovelace. Add.: Lovelace Clinic, Albuquerque, New Mexico. *Who's Who in America*, 1948-49.

Delos Wheeler Lovelace, b. Brainerd, Minn., Dec. 2, 1894, s. of Mortimer Nathan & Josephine (Wheeler) Lovelace & gr. son of Nathan Lovelace. m. Nov. 29, 1917, Maude

Hart. Res., 63 Wyatt Road, Garden City, New York, Aug., 1948, when she sent data. *Who's Who in America,* 1948-49.

Maryland Records

William Lovelace, Transportation, 1664, Annapolis, Md. folio 294, Libr. 6 (8), Charles County.

Alice Lovelace, m. Nov. 1, 1779, Daniel Carney.

Barton Lovelace, poss. s. of Benj. Lovis, m. Jan. 11, 1778, Lucy Watson. Marriage also recorded in Montgomery Co. He enrolled July 18, 1776, from Washington Co.

Darkus Loveless, m. Feb. 23, 1878, Wb. Gehayan.

James Lovelace, m. Oct. 15, 1789, Henrietta Moore.

John Lovelace, m. 1834, Therisa A. Robinson (Registrar of Zachia Milton, St. Mary's Ranch).

Thomas Lovelace, Land Survey in 1763.

William H. Lovelace, m. Jan. 27, 1843, Lucinda Rocknell.

John Lovelace, Land Survey, 1739, Hickory thicket, 12 acres; 1740, Loveless Addition, 90 acres. He with Lake, Samuel & Wm. Loveless lived on Manor of Zachariah on Feb., 1768.

Prince George County

Elisha Lovelace, m. int. Jan. 6, 1789, Anne Jones. Serg. Elisha Loveless served May 22, 1778, to Jan. 16, 1779.

Ignatious Loveles or Lovelis, m. int. Dec. 23, 1779, Mary Ann Calvert.

Child.:

Elijah, b. Mar. 2, 1787.

Elizabeth, b. Feb. 28, 1796.

Johanna Lovelace, m. int. Dec. 31, 1796, m. 1797, Josias Pyett or Padgett.

Lake Lovelis, m. Dec. 18, 1800, Mary Ridgway.

Judson Lovelace, s. of Adam & Sarah Lovelace, b. Sept. 12, 1815, bp. Apr., 1816, All Saints Parish, Frederick Co., Md.

Eunice or Unice Lovelace, m. Jan. 13, 1793, James Hunt.

Rosie Lovelace, m. Charlotte ?. (Her will, dated 1846, proved 1851, Montgomery Co., Md., mentions children, Ignatious Fendall, of Montgomery Co., Md. His will, dated 1860, mentions sister, Matilda Jane Ray, & was witnessed by Mary Lovelace; Banoni; Matilda Jane, m. Wm. Ray, & they removed to Columbia Co., Ga. His will was witnessed by Mary C. Lovelace.)

Lake Lovelace, mentioned in *Natchez Papers,* p. 52. Settled Sicily Island in 1802. Found encampment of Indians used later by Edward Lovelace for first cotton gin.

William Lovelace, m. Eliner ?. Child.: Crasann (dau., b. Mar. 1, 1786), & Rebeckah, b. Nov. 1, 1787.

Allen Loveless (shown in De Kalb Co., Georgia Census of 1830; Marshall Co., Ala., 1840 & 1850). m.. Roxana Hodges (b. 1804, Rutland, Mass., d. Guntersville, Marshall Co., Ala., dau. of Barnum Hodges, who was b. 1773 Mansfield, Mass. s. of Job Hodges (b. 1747, Norton, Mass. m. 1771, Margaret White) & Esther Newcomb, who was b. 1779, Norton, dau. of James Newcomb (b. 1757), m. Esther Dean (b. 1751). She with bro., James M. Hodges (b. abt. 1803, Mass., d. Guntersville) & a married sister, left Mass. for Ga. abt. 1820).

Child. (5) — b. first 4, Ga.; 5th, Ala.

1. Elizabeth, b. 1829, d. Guntersville. m. Wendolin Siebalt. A gr. dau., Elizabeth Siebalt, res. Guntersville, 1946.
2. Louisa, b. 1831, d. 1900, unm.
3. Clotilda, b. 1834, d. 1856. m. John Newton Johnson.

Child. (4) — Johnson.

a. Allen.
b. Azelea.
c. Kate.
d. Phillip.

A gr. dau., Mrs. J. L. Scuzin, res. 806 S. Staples St., Corpus Christi, Texas, in 1948, & a gr. gr. s., Loren R. Johnson, res. 3238 13th St., N.W., Washington, D.C. He has worked on the Loveless line.

4. Greenberry, b. abt. 1836, as age 14 in 1850 census, d. Oct. 16, 1879. He served in the Confederate Army, was wounded & lost several fingers on the left hand. m. (1) ? & had ch.: a. Mary J., b. Oct. 10, 1863, Guntersville. m. Will Watson & had dau., Aleen Watson, who d. between 1915-1920, Valley Head, Ala. m. (2) Mattie Boshart, & had 4 ch.; b. Ada, b. Feb., 1869. m. Ed. Moody. Ch.: O. A. Moody & Bessie Moody, who m. Rev. Julius Blackburn, a Methodist minister & res. Sylacanga, Ala.; c. Annie, b. Oct. 10, 1870, d. abt. 1925, Clarksdale, Miss., res. with s., John Wilborn; d. James, b. Apr., 1872, d. Aug. 26, 1900, unm.; e. +Bessie, b. 1873, m. Dr. David Kirby. Greenberry m. (3), Feb. 6, 1877, M. A. Hooper. No ch.

5. Mary, b. Dec. 10, 1842, d. Apr. 13, 1900. m. L. D. Lusk, of Guntersville.

e. Bessie Loveless, dau. of Greenberry, b. Nov. 2, 1873, Guntersville, d. May 6, 1938, Scottsboro, Ala. m. (1) abt. 1891, Dr. David Kirby, who d. Nov., 1899, Marshal Co. m. (2) Dec. 7, 1901, Langston, Jackson Co., Ala., as his 3rd wife, Thomas Edward Morgan (b. Feb. 18, 1866, d. Dec. 23, 1934, Scottsboro, s. of John M. Morgan (b. 1838) & Margaret Snodgrass (b. 1840, Washington Co., Va.).

2 Kirby ch. were:

(1) Louis Loveless, b. 1895, d. 1918, served in World War I.

(2) Davia Louise, b. Dec. 23, 1899, shortly after her father's death. Res., unm., Scottsboro, in 1946.

2 Morgan ch., b. Langston, Ala.:

(1) Mattie, b. Dec. 31, 1914. m. (1), 1933, Lloyd Starky, who d. 1939. She m. (2), Boston, Mass., Fred G. Blevins, of U. S. Navy. No ch.

(2) Margaret Elizabeth, b. Feb. 4, 1911. m. July 4,

1931, Huntsville, Ala., Harold O'Dell Weeks (b. Apr. 29, 1906, Cullman, Ala., s. of Hiram David & Etta (Blaylock) Weeks of Cullman). 2 Weeks ch. are Mary Loveless, b. Aug. 14, 1934, & Harold Morgan, b. Jan. 6, 1938.

From Mrs. Harold O'Dell (Margaret Eliz. Morgan) Weeks, Scottsboro, Ala., Dec., 1946.

Benj. Lovis, b. abt. 1727, as age 49. m. Sary, b. abt. 1736, as age 41. 5 ch.: Eleanah, b. abt. 1755, as age 21; Barton, b. abt. 1757, as age 19; Zadock, b. abt. 1760, as age 16 (had a land grant, 1805, in Nelson, Ky.); Reson, b. abt. 1764, as age 12; Sary, b. abt. 1770,, as age 6. (Census of Frederick Co., now Montgomery Co., Md., Aug., 1776).

Munroe Lovelace, m. Louisa Jane Lewis (b. 1848, dau. of Jesse Taliaferro Lewis (b. 1808, Rutherford Co., North Carolina, m. Susan Cowart), s. of Charles Lewis, Sr.). p. 285, *Lewis Family in America,* 1893.

Capt. Reson Lord Lovelace, "of Eng. descent & Colonial family," m. Anna M. Hadden, "of Scotch Irish ancestry," b. Oct. 13, 1824, in Ky. 11 Lovelace ch., of whom the 3rd was Hon. Emit S., b. June 30, 1849, Clark Co., Ill. at age 18 he moved to Stearns, Minn. Res., 1900, Ransom Co., North Dakota. m. 1894, Betsy Peterson. He was a merchant, Mason, State Representative in 1896. 5 ch. were: Florence E.; Carrie; Philip J.; Alfred; Nora, m. Mr. Houghan. Res. 1941, Leman Ave., Arcadia, Calif. Other ch. named by Carrie Bell Crosby Lovelace in 1941 were John; James; Alba, d. 1941, & left several ch.; Monroe, d. young; Molly Belle, m. Bennett; Sophronia; Carrie. p. 363, *Comp. of Hist. & Biog. of North Dakota,* 1900. Extensive biography, but no further genealogical data. His 11th ch. was Colonel Monroe Lovelace (b. May 3, 1863, Martinsville, Clarke Co., Ill., d. June 27, 1922, Los Angeles, Calif.) m. Carrie Belle Crosby (b. Mar. 30, 1868, d. Feb. 12, 1948, dau. of Ezra

Crosby & Louisa Chadwick). 4 ch. were: Wm. Monroe, b. June 11, 1891, Englevale, North Dakota. m. 3 times but no ch. Res., 1941, when he called at my home, 51 W. Bellevue Dr., Pasadena, Calif.; Vera Gertruda, b. Feb. 28, 1893. m. (1) Edward Martin, & had 2 little girls,, who were murdered. m. (2) Paul Buus. 3 Buus ch. are Dorothy, b. May 30, 1920. m. Aug. 3, 1940, Wayne Wisehard; Paul, b. May 24, 1924; Wm., b. Oct. 29, 1926; Hazel Marie, b. Dec. 9, 1897; Leston Lord, b. Jan. 13, ,1900. m. & has 3 ch.; Gladys Ida, b. Dec. 29, 1902. m. (2) Lyle Landis.

Asa Lovelace, of Saybrook, in Middlesex Co., Conn., on Long Island Sound. "Descendant of Thomas of Long Island." p. 189, vol. III, *Western Mass. Hist.*, Lewis Pub. Co., 1926. Had 16 ch., including Asa, who settled in Calif., & Maurice, b. 1804, d. 1869, age 65, Richmond, Mass. Lived at Fishkill, N. Y., farmer, had charge of Gen. Van Wicks estate. m. (1) Miss Bashford. m. (2) Polly Cargill. Ch. by first wife were Stephen B. & Walter Allen. By second wife, Catherine & Charles, an expert foundryman, engaged in iron business in DePere, Wisconsin. Walter Allen, b. abt. 1822, Fishkill, N. Y., d. 1896, Richmond, age 74. m. Mary Emily Shaw, of Nassau, Rensselaer Co., N. Y., d. 1904, dau. of Peter Harrington & Elizabeth (Waterbury) Shaw. Only ch. was Charles Peter, b. Nov. 15, 1867, Richmond. m. Dec., 1881, Ellen Jeanette Smith, of Angelica, N. Y. He d. Feb. 12, 1911, leaving dau., Gertrude Elizabeth, who m. James H. Connor, of Keene, N. H., & Walter Earl, b. Apr. 24, 1886, Richmond; gen. mgr. of New Eng. Construction Co.; member of many lodges; res., 1926, 164 Maple St., Springfield, Mass. m. Nov. 24, 1909, Jessie A. Wheeler, dau. of Frank & Mary (Stone) Wheeler, of Canaan, N. Y. Ch., Warren Earl, b. June 24, 1912.

Charles Lovelace, of Alabama, m. Etta Claiborne Thomas (2nd ch. of John Gabriel Thomas, of Louisberg, North Caro-

lina, & Augusta Claiborne, dau. of Rev. John Gregory Claiborne, 134th gen. from Adam).

James Taylor Lovelace, of Alta, Iowa. m. Jane Harmon. Their dau., Minnie Imogene, b. June 3, 1867, Worthington, Dubuque Co., Iowa, m. Mar. 22, 1886, Hiram Converse (b. Dec. 25, 1850, Watertown, N. Y., d. Nov. 20, 1892, Diamond, Cherokee, Iowa). His ancestry is carried back for 9 gens. in *Converse Family*, vol. II, p. 644.

P. M. Lovlace, m. Sara Dunegan. They moved to Patterson, Wayne Co., Mo., in 1855. A number of their ch. moved westward, settling in Utah, Iowa & Idaho. Ch.: Manuel, Lowry, Vira, Caroline, Lucy, Dora & James, b. 1845 in Tenn. He was a mill owner & farmer; in Confederate service for a while; in 1885 built a mill & engaged in the lumber business; one of the largest land owners in Missouri. m. 1875, Alsie Fenton. Ch.: John, Minnie, Nellie, Thomas, Ora. From a family record loaned me by Ann Loveless of Utah.

William Hanley Loveless, b. Dec. 2, 1858, Kings Co., N. Y. d. Aug. 29, 1916, Somerville, Mass. m. Apr. 7, 1880, Charlestown, Mass., Laura Mahar (b. Dec. 28, 1862, Kings Co.). 5 ch., all b. Charlestown.

1. William Henry, b. Apr. 7, 1881, d. Nov. 29, 1920, Somerville. m. Aug. 16, 1909, Mary Grimes (b. Aug. 2, 1885). Their ch., Fred Morrison, b. May 28, 1910, m. Mary Cady.

2. Fred Owen, b. Oct. 6, 1883, m. Apr. 5, 1910, Catherine Orgill (b. Sept. 29, 1886, Boston). Ch., b. Boston, are: Benron Frederick, b. Apr. 9, 1911; & Edward, b. Oct. 6, 1913.

3. Herbert Leslie, b. Oct. 31, 1885. m. Jan. 2, 1908, Lillian May ?. m. (2) Jan. 24, 1910, Sadie Elizabeth ? (b. Apr. 27, 1892). Ch.: Lillian May, b. Sept. 29, 1908; & Lester Richard, b. Oct. 20, 1910, Medford, Mass.

4. George Morrison, b. Oct. 26, 1887, res. Jan. 7, 1923, when he sent this data, 104 Capen St., Medford Hillside, Boston. Our numerous letters to him & others presumably of this family returned as unknown. m. Oct. 11, 1919, Margaret O'Neill (b. Oct. 9, 1889, Lynn, Mass.). Ch., George Morrison, b. Nov. 8, 1921, Medford.

5. Arthur Allison, b. June 26, 1894. m. Apr. 22, 1913, Charlotte F. ? (b. Feb. 28, 1896). Ch., Helen Gertrude, b. Feb. 2, 1914, Somerville.

Frederick Loveless, b. Feb. 12, 1878. He was a steamboat captain residing at Ogdensburg, N. Y. m. Oct. 14, 1906, as her 2nd husband, Mrs. Hazel Kirk Weaver Briggs (b. Nov. 7, 1886, Salamanca, N. Y.), 3rd ch. of Benton Ernest Weaver, who was b. Aug. 30, 1856, Natural Bridge, N. Y., d. Oct. 14, 1921, Ogdensburg, m. Dec. 29, 1879, Warren, Pa., Elizabeth Jane Olds (b. May 27, 1857, Morristown, N. Y., d. Aug. 13, 1923). Ch. of John Smith Weaver. p. 550, *Weaver Genealogy*, 1928. Son Frederick Weaver Loveless, b. May 21, 1910.

William Warren Loveless, b. abt. 1805 in Va., d. 1880. Had ch., Solomon Johnson Loveless, b. May 8, 1851, Fayette Co., Ohio, d. 1927, London, Ohio, & bur. Mt. Sterling Cemetery. m. 1875, Diantha Merrill (b. Dec. 25, 1856, Pickaway Co., Ohio, d. 1931, dau. of Jacob Merrill & Sally Adkins). 2 ch. are: Rev. Wm. Warren, b. Feb. 17, 1876, res. 195 Bridge St., Chillocothe, Ohio, on June 9, 1941, when his letter to Ora L. Loveless, of Clarkes Hill, Ind., was loaned me by Mrs. A. J. Loveless — C. S., b. Sept. 8, 1885.

Charles Loveless, b. abt. 1872, res. (1924), Corbettsville, Broome Co., N. Y., m. & had s., Elmer Oscar, b. May 6, 1897, who m. Helen Laverack (b. Jan. 27, 1902, Eng. ch. b. June 17, 1923). Said to be a distant relative of Pres.

John Quincy Adams. She res. 3141 Jasper St., Philadelphia, Pa., Oct. 17, 1924, when she sent this data.

Emma O. Loveless, m. Wilbur Tobias Caldwell, b. Dec. 8, 1865, ch. of Lewis Caldwell & Alvina Tobias, of Mulford, Ill. p. 1125, *Caldwell Genealogy*.

Robert H. Loveless, m. Minnie ?. Ch., Annie Loveless, b. Dec. 10, 1882, Providence, Rhode Island.

Catherine Loveless, m. Oct. 8, 1856, as his 2nd wife, Myron Bly Hatch (b. Sept. 23, 1831, Wellsville, N. Y., d. July, 1901, LeRoy, Calif.), eldest ch. of Lucian Hatch (b. Aug. 22, 1808, d. Feb. 6, 1891, Wellsville, m. Aug. 15, 1830, Chautauqua, N. Y., Varners Bly, who was b. Feb. 28, 1813, & d. 1895). He had m. 1st, July, 1852, Adaline Kinney, presumably of a line of the Kinneys descended from Henry & Ann, of Salem, Mass. From Mrs. Baranbas (Mildred Noe Johnson), Byran, Jr., 455 E. 51st St., N. Y. City, in 1940, when she sent considerable data on her Taplan, Wilkinson & Dunham lines, with request for information re Susannah Kinne, who m. in Holland, before 1622, John Dunham. p. 67, *Henry & Ann Kinne, Pioneers of Salem*, 1947c.

Chancey A. Lovelace, m. Mar. 28, 1888, Lizzie Conkle (b. Sept. 3, 1869, Richmond, Ind., dau. of Edward & Emaline Conkle).

Charles Lovelace, m. Elizabeth Hunt Slack. p. 222, *Wilson-Thompson Families*.

Pinkney or Pickney Wilson Lovelass or Lovelace, b. Mar. 5, 1831, d. Dec. 23, 1869, from exposure during Civil War which brought on tuberculosis.

"Requests to the War Department show no such name upon record, but do show his brother, *Thomas A. Loveless*,

who was b. July 10, 1835, and d. Feb. 22, 1863, a victim of the war. He was a private in Co. "F," 9th Regiment, Alabama Infantry, Confederate States Army. Enlisted June 4, 1861, at Athens, Ala. Admitted to General Hospital No. 9, because of rheumatism from exposure. He was transferred to General Hospital No. 21. Was furloughed for 60 days Nov. 8, 1862; age shown on their records in Washington War Dept. as 24. His name is not shown on subsequent rolls on file, which cover in part the period from May 1, 1863, to Oct. 31, 1864, and no later record of him has been found, nor do the records contain any information of his family." Quoted from a letter to the War Department asking for such information as their records contain. Date of letter Mar. 20, 1934.

There was evidently another brother of these two men named John T. Loveless, whose birth is recorded in an old Bible but no further data has been available. Date of his birth is given as Jan. 24, 1850. — Mrs. Roy J. Loveless.

m. Dec. 31, 1854, Esther A. Skinner (b. Sept. 14, 1836, d. Nov. 27, 1899).

Child. (6).

1. Martha Ophelia, b. Feb. 6, 1856, d. Dec. 5, 1871.

2. Ladora Adalade, b. June 2, 1857, d. Nov. 11, 1930. m. Sept. 11, 1873, John H. Overstreet.

Child. (3) — Overstreet. Source, Mrs. Roy J. (Adine Buck) Loveless, 2213 Hawthorne, Fort Worth, Texas, July, 1948.

a. John Robin, b. Dec. 23, 1875. m. Apr. 30, 1902, Jessie Burneice.

Child. (3) — Overstreet.

(1) Hallie, m. (1) John Clopton. Res. (1948), San Antonio, Texas. m. (2) Wm. Spice.

(2) J. E., b. Ft. Worth, Tex., Lieut. in Air Corps, killed by Bomber explosion in San Gorgonio Pass, Oct., 1941.

(3) J. R., Jr., b. July 6, 1919, Dallas, Texas, d.

Sept. 25, 1943, of Infantile Paralysis while in the Army.

b. Hal S., b. & d. El Paso, Texas.

c. A dau., d. Dec. 14, 1881, infancy.

3. James Larkin, b. May 3, 1860, d. Jan. 19, 1904, Mineral Wells, Texas. m. Jan. 6, 1886, Montague Co., Tex., Margaret Alice Livingstone (dau. of W. K. Livingstone & Mollie Roberson, who were m. Oct. 24, 1867).

Child. (2) — b. Montague Co., Tex.

a. Homer Gaines, b. July 21, 1886, d. Aug. 1, 1933, from effects of gas in World War I & bur. at Mineral Wells.

b. Roy Jefferson, b. June 27, 1892, res. (1940), 2213 Hawthorne, Fort Worth, Texas. m. July 24, 1913, Ft. Worth, Mary Adine Buck (b. Feb. 11, 1893, Ft. Worth, dau. of Judge Raymond Halbert Buck, descended from Buck family of Warren Co., Va. The ancestor came to America from Eng., settled in Valley of Shenandoah River on southern side of North Branch), who m. Nov. 28, 1891, Eula Elliot Blackmore, dau. of Joseph A. Blackmore (gr. s. of Andrew Geer & Mary Vance, of Fayetteville, Tenn. This Geer was well known in history of that state & wife, Mary Vance, was of the Vance family of North Carolina), who m. May 14, 1890, Mary Lucinda Dillard (b. abt. 1840 in Ala., d. Feb. 1, 1898, & bur. Kopperl, Tex., by side of husband, who d. earlier). She sent in and requested data in 1940 and thereafter. Res.: 2213 Hawthorne, Ft. Worth, Texas.

Child. (1) — b. Mineral Wells.

Roy J., Jr., b. Oct. 11, 1916. m. Feb. 8, 1941, Jane Magee.

4. Mary Virginia, b. Apr. 5, 1862. m. Dec. 13, 1885, J. J. Norris. Had Norris children.

5. Ellen Lee, b. Apr. 24, 1863, living in 1940. m. Dec. 25, 1887, W. F. Brooks.

6. William Tom, b. Oct. 16, 1867. m. Aug. 19, 1894, Carrie Wilkes (d. Aug. 2, 1931, & bur. Mineral Wells, Texas).

Child. (2).

a. Alma, b. July 11, 1895. m. July 15, 1918, J. R. Shelton. Ch., Carro Ruth Shelton.

b. Velma, b. Oct. 16, 1897. m. Apr. 27, 1922, Ben Carder. No children.

Wilson Hill Loveless, b. 1870, Alabama, res. Kemp, Texas, a man of near eighty or more years, gave me this information when I saw him some few years ago. His mother was Nancy McClamy, of Alabama. This family also resides in Tennessee.

His father was Wilson Loveless, b. 1818, Edgefield Co., South Carolina.

His uncle, Sam, was born in 1826.

His uncle, Frank, was born in 1808.

Wilson Hill Loveless never knew nor saw his uncles and got this data from family Bible somewhere. Feel sure that this man and my husband are kin, since Wilson was given name of Roy's grandfather and of this man and his father. Does this fit into anything that you have from either Edgefield Co., South Carolina, or Brewton, Alabama? They lived in either or both.

Have hopes of putting this family with some of the ones you have. — Adine Buck Loveless.

Aaron Lovelace, of Eng. descent. His father settled in South Carolina, where he was born. m. Maryim Blaylock. Moved from Edgefield District, S. C., to Lowndes Co., Ala., when Basil was 6 yrs. old, or 1830.

Child. (8).

1. Basil Manly, b. Feb., 1824, d. 1900, at Hotel Lovelace, Brewton, Ala. m. 1852, Amanda Lovelace, his cousin, dau. of Thomas Lovelace, of Edgefield, S. C. He was same age and kin to Susan Lovelace Lee. Lived in Escambia Co., served in Civil War, as did two of his brothers; then lived in Lowndes Co. before settling in Brewton.

Child. (6).

a. Edwin Marshall. "A direct descendant of the Eng. Lovelaces, as were all of this name." (McClendon records.) Sent data in 1921. b. July 14, 1854, Pleasant Hill, Dallas Co., Alabama. Res., 1921, near Brewton, Escambia Co., Ala. Pres. of Lovelace Lumber Co.; Director of Bank in Brewton; Alderman; State Senator; Democrat; Baptist; Knight of Pythias; merchant; typical chivalrous Southern gentleman of most popular personality; photograph shown p. 978, vol. I, 1893, *Memorial Record of Alabama.*

m. Fanny or Frances or Flourney McKenzie (b. dau. of Capt. Bethune Beaton McKenzie (p. 567, *Memorial Record of Alabama,* shows his portrait & biography), b. Oct. 11, 1837, near Louisville, Barbour Co., Ala. m. Oct. 14, 1858, Caroline Elizabeth Flournay, who was dau. of Thos. Flournay of Eufaula, Ala. (p. 421, *Memorial Record of Alabama,* Biog. of S. J. Flourney), ch. of Daniel McKenzie (who m. 1834, Amanda Burch), 2nd ch. of Kenneth McKenzie (m. Annie Harrington), s. of Murdo McKenzie, original McKenzie immigrant who came from Isle of Skye, Scotland, to U.S.A. in 1787 with wife & 5 ch. He d. on shipboard of ship fever, but his family landed in Baltimore & thence went to Richmond, No. Carolina. p. 1122, Vol. V, *Dictionary of Alabama Biography* — "Bethune Beaton McKenzie."

Child. (7).

(1) Edwin McKenzie.
(2) Wm. Yancey.
(3) Barnes Flournay.
(4) Laura A.
(5) Annie.
(6) Catherine.
(7) James H.

b. Laura S.

c. Anna, m. June 1, 1879, W. H. Strong (b. Oct. 27, 1853, s. of Samuel & Alathea (Stillwell) Strong).

d. Catherine.

e. William Yancey.
f. James Hooks.
2. William Blaylock.
3. James Clark.
4. David Moore.
5. Ezekiel Perkins.
6. Benjamin Lewis.
7. Ellen Jane, m. James F. Martin.
8. Caroline, m. Charles D. Hooks.

Virginia Records

Halifax Co. Marriages from Carrington, *Hist. of Halifax Co., Va.*, 1924.

Feb., 1783, William Lovelace m. Sally Franbrough.

Mar. 3, 1791, William Smith m. Bridget Loveless.

1794, John Owen m. Amey Lovelace.

Nov. 14, 1801, Rachel Lampkin m. Lovelace Haley or Hailey.

Dec. 15, 1825, Elizabeth Paynor m. James Lovelace.

Dec. 25, 1832, Harriet R. Butler m. Charles Lovelace.

Dec. 20, 1832, Martha Browder m. James Lovelace.

Dec. 20, 1839, Permelia W. Maynard m. James C. Lovelace.

Nov. 22, 1849, Marthe Ann Barksdale m. James S. Lovelace.

June 11, 1845, Amelia A. Baker m. John S. Lovelace.

Dec. 13, 1832, Wilmuth Russell m. Nathaniel Lovelace.

Oct. 8, 1834, William Waller m. Sarah C. Lovelace.

Feb. 9, 1839, Jeremiah White m. E. W. Lovelace.

June 23, 1842, William White m. Mary W. Loveless.

John Lovelace m. Feb. 4, 1853, Ann S. Hopkins (b. Mar. 7, 1822, 9th ch. of Nelson Hopkins (b. 1783) & Mary Mathews). p. 202, *Hopkins of Virginia & Related Families*, 1931, which completes her ancestry.

Walter L. Lovelace, b. Oct. 1, 1831, Charlotte Co., Va.,

d. Aug. 5, 1866, Danville, Mo. Lawyer, legislator, Judge of Supreme Court, Speaker of the House. p. 125, *Ency. of Hist. of Missouri,* Vol. IV. Extensive biography here.

David Loveless of Virginia. Descended from one of 4 bros. in Revolutionary War. m. (1) & had 5 ch. b. in Tenn. m. (2) Mary Smith, bur. Pilcher Cem., near Vandalia, Ill.

Child. by 2nd wife:

a. Zadock.

b. William, b. in Blount Co., Tenn. m. Jane Bell, who was related to John Bell, who ran for President in 1860.

c. David.

d. James.

e. Mary Margaret.

(From Milo J. Lovelass, Lawyer, Alaska Bldg., Seattle, Wash. Personal interview Mar. 24, 1926. Told of 4 bros., Revolutionary soldiers, one of whom was wounded & crawled into a log & thereby escaped after battle. He promised additional Loveless material, but my persistent later inquiries received no reply.)

Charles Lovelace, b. 1696, d. Dec. 5, 1735. m. 1718, Mrs. Bridgett McLaughlin (Macklathlin) Jobson of Richmond Co., Va. Ch., Bridgett, b. abt. 1719, m. Robert Forrester (will dated 1783). Will book No. 6, p. 93. Aug. 2, 1756. Charles Lovelace will presented in court by widow Bridgett, to whom he left 150 acres of "Richneck." Witnesses: Wm. Everett & Charles Dodson. Eldest son, Charles Lovelace, asked court to record will. (From Mrs. A. C. (Marie Bell) Ellis, R.D. 3, Box 69, E. Los Gatos, Calif., Sept. 14, 1944. She Regent of Los Gatos D.A.R.)

Andrew J. Lovelace, of Grason Co., Va., b. Dec. 23, 1854, d. Sept., 1896. m. Jan. 26, 1882, Eliza J. Gollehan (b. May 11, 1858, St. Clair, Smith Co. (nee Washington Co.), Va., dau. of James Gollehan, who was b. July 11, 1821, res.

(1911), Seven Mile Ford, Va. m. Margaret Scott. He was 8th ch. of Robert Gollehon & Anne Tilson, of the 7th gen. in descent from Edmund Tilson, who was granted land Oct. 1, 1638, Woeberry Plain, Plymouth, Mass. From *The Tilson Genealogy*, 1911c, by Mercer V. Tilson. Extensive Tilson ancestry shown here to William the Conqueror, but he not positively fitted in. 7 Lovelace ch., all b. Chilhowie, Va., were: Ida M., b. Sept. 1, 1883; Grover C., b. Dec. 21, 1884; Elizabeth G., b. June 28, 1886; Murriel M., b. Oct. 22, 1888; Joseph J., b. Nov. 11, 1890; Mary L., b. Sept. 4, 1894; Anna E. B., b. May 1, 1896.

Feb. 16, 1665, a Thomas Lovelace with others signed land grant to Mrs. Ann Taft, of Accomacko Co., Va.

Thomas Lovelace, b. abt. 1695, as age 89 in 1785, Va. records. m. Feb. 10, 1725/6, Susanna Wood.

Thomas Lovelace, b. abt. 1701, as Census of 1790, Halifax Co., Va., states he was 89 yrs. old. Family tradition, possibly erroneous, reports him to be son of Rev. Nathaniel Lovelace, who came from Eng. with a number of brothers, four of whom were preachers. d. 1791, will proved July 23, 1791, Halifax Co., Va., mentions 11 children. m. Tabitha Oldham. (She was probably of the same family as Col. Samuel Oldham (1680-1762), of Westmoreland Co., Va., who was son of Thomas Oldham, whose father, John Oldham, came from Eng. abt. 1635 and settled in Va.)

Oct. 31, 1772, Thomas Lovelace, of Halifax Co., witnessed deeds, etc. Some of his descendants were contacted by S. M. McClendon before 1922 and they stated he came from the Eastern shore of Virginia.

Child. (11) shown in Will of 1791. Carrington, *Hist. of Halifax Co., Va.*, 1924.

1. Charles, m. July 27, 1789, Rhoda Hart.
2. Nathaniel. He with Charles Lovelace & Wm. Smith were executors of Will of Thomas Sr.
3. Thomas.

4. John Logan, m. America Baker. Their son, Charles L. Lovelace, m. Elizabeth Hodge, by whom she had 5 Lovelace children. *Makers of America,* 1916.

5. James.

6. William Oldham, m. Miss Womack or Womeck.

7. Bridget Smith.

8. Anna.

9. Tabitha, b. Nov. 11, 1786, d. Feb. 10, 1824. m. Nov. 17, 1798, Charles Harris.

10. Sallie, m. (1) Mr. Smith; m. (2) Mr. Harris.

11. Elizabeth or Betsy, b. Dec. 5, 1775. m. Sept. 28, 1795, James Collins, of Halifax Co.

An extensive record of this Collins Family was being compiled in 1940 and previously when Bessie H. Bagby, of 1503 Milner Crescent, Birmingham, Ala., a direct descendant, sent in data.

Charles Albert Lovelace, Jr., s. of Charles Albert Lovelace, of Charlottesville, Va., b. June 21, 1849, there. d. Nov. 10, 1935, Washington, D.C. m. Falls Church, Va., Mary Alice Lee (b. Nov. 12, 1854, Richmond, Va. d. Jan. 26, 1937. Washington, D.C. Dau. of Fitz Hugh & Nancy (Harmon) Lee). 2 ch. were Georgia Alice, b. Feb. 22, 1886, d. age 6 yrs.; Lee Edward, b. Feb. 18, 1892. Stated he was an M.D. from Johns Hopkins Medical School when he called at my home July 16, 1941, & that he had copy of original grant of George III to his Lovelace ancestors, of land along the Potomac. He gave addresses in Washington, D.C., & Long Beach, Calif. He completely disappeared thereafter & my extensive letters to all the places he had mentioned failed to locate him.

Dr. Arthur S. Lovelace, b. ?, d. Sept. 23, 1897, m. Oct. 31, 1882, as her first husband, Ida Ludington Burke (b. Mar. 12, 1859, San Juan, Calif., 1st ch. of Thos. K. Burke, who

m. June 10, 1858, Oroville, Calif., Mary Elizabeth Newcomb. She was b. Nov. 14, 1841, of the 9th gen. in descent from Andrew Newcomb. p. 479, *Newcomb Genealogy,* 1923c.

Marcia Loveless, m. ? William Updike (b. 1802, d. 1848, Geneva, Ill. Moved there from Thompson Co., N. J.; a farmer), 1st ch. of Levi Updike (b. 1779, d. 1861. m. 1801, Somerset Co., N. J. In 1834 moved to Chautauqua Co., N. Y., & thence to Geneva), 3rd ch. of William Updike (b. 1746, d. 1839, Somerset Co. m. 1774, his cousin, Naomi Johnson, who d. 1824), 4th ch. of John Updike, b. 1708, d. 1783. m. Mary Bragaw, 3rd ch. of Lawrence Updike (b. 1675, d. 1748. m. Agnes ?), 4th ch. of Johannes Opdyck (b. 1651, d. 1729, Dutch Kills, Long Island. m. Catherin ?. Also res. Hopewell, N. J.), 3rd ch. of Louris Jansen opDyck (b. 1600, Holland, d. 1659, Gravesend, L. I. m. Christina ?). From *Opdych Genealogy,* 1889, p. 304. 8 ch. of Marcia Loveless Updike.

1. Barziliah W., b. 1827. Res. Sheffield, Iowa. m. Amelia Yates. Had 4 Updike ch.

2. Emeline, b. 1828. m. W. I. Little. Res. Tobias, Nebraska.

3. Cornelius S., b. 1830, d. 1855. m. Elizabeth Mattice. Res. Jacksonville, Iowa. Son, William C. Updike, b. 1855, m. Ella Mason. Res. Elbert Co., Colo. 3 ch. b. Sherman, Kansas.

4. Catherine, b. 1836, d. 1862. m. Bela McDonald. Res. Warsaw, Indiana.

5. Mary Jane, b. 1837. m. Frank B. Cruver. Res. Charles City, Iowa.

6. Sarah A., b. 1839. m. Geo. F. Boulton, of Charles City, Iowa.

7. Carrie M., b. 1840. m. Julius P. North, of Charles City, Iowa.

8. Harriet D., 1844. m. Peter Rose, of Charles City, Iowa.

Elnathan Loveless, of West Butler, N. Y. m. July 16, 1875, Savannah, N. Y., Mary Ida Lowell (b. May 10, 1855, dau. of Prof. Joshua Adams Lowell & Nancy Taylor). 4 Loveless ch. were: Winnie, b. Feb. 13, 1880; Grace, b. Mar. 12, 1882, d. Jan. 19, 1894; Frank, b. Mar. 14, 1884; Jennie, b. Apr. 6, 1886. p. 603, *Lowell Historic Genealogy*, 1889c.

Alfred Monroe Loveless, b. Feb., 1855. County surveyor of Mooresboro, Cleveland Co., Ohio. m. (1) Cordelia Hamrich; m. (2) Anna Wilkins. 3 ch. of 1st wife were Von B., Daisy C., Lillie. 4 ch. by 2nd wife were Dr. Thomas C., William M., May, & Maude. Data contributed by Ann J. Loveless, of Payson, Utah.

Hannah Loveless, b. Hartford, Conn. m. (1) Isaac Odell; m. (2) William Cleveland (b. 1775, Ireland, d. 1822 of yellow fever at Perry St., New York City). Ch., Juliana Cleveland, b. 1819. m. Mr. Wooley. Res. 1886 near Big Bend (Tillinghast), Wis. p. 2255, Vol. III, *Cleveland Genealogy*.

Eunice Loveless, dau. of John & Hannah. m. Samuel Cogswell (b. Dec. 9, 1774), 9th gen. in descent from Robert Cogswell. p. 1175, Vol. II, *Cleveland Genealogy*. Their s., Rev. Aaron Cogswell, b. ?. m. Lydia Ann Beckwith, dau. of Samuel Beckwith & Jane Lowry. Their s., Samuel Beckwith Cogswell, b. Dec. 4, 1854, Clementsport, Nova Scotia, Canada.; res. Arcadia, Yarmouth Co., Nova Scotia, in 1885. m. Feb. 6, 1876, Ann M. J. Cleveland, of the 7th gen. in descent from Moses Cleveland. 2 Cogswell ch., b. Lynn, Mass., were Ray Beckwith, b. June 8, 1879, & Edbert Cleveland, b. Mar. 31, 1881.

Henry Loveless, m. Dec. 30, 1834, Whitestown, Oneida Co., N. Y., Patty Marinda Thompson (b. June 8, 1815, Eaton, Madison Co., N. Y.), 4th ch. of Asa Thompson (b. May 12,

1781, Royalston, Mass., m. Sept. 18, 1806, Sally Locke*). He was one of 10 ch. of Jonas Thompson, Lieut. from Royalston in Revolution in 1782, d. there Nov. 5, 1816, had m. Margerete ? vit. rec. of Royalston & *History of the Town of Royalston,* by Caswell.

Child. (9) — of Henry Loveless. b. Newton Falls, Ohio.

1. Harriet M., b. Dec. 11, 1835, d. Sept., 1913. m. Philip Cook & had 5 Cook children. He was a prominent newspaper man.

2. Edwin L., b. Sept., 1837, member of 3rd Ill. Cavalry.

3. Theodore C., b. June, 1840.

4. Henry D., b. Dec. ?. Enlisted 20th Ill. Infantry in Civil War. d. Rockford, Mich., where his son Carl lived in 1930.

5. Loren Thompson, b. Sept. 7, 1844, d. Apr. 30, 1932, Seattle, Wash. m. Mar. 1, 1870, Craton, Mich., Caroline Elizabeth Thomas (b. May 1, 1850, Craton, d. Nov. 3, 1938). He shipped in U. S. Navy gunboat, "Louisville," & took part in 6 naval engagements.

*Sally Locke, b. Aug. 30, 1787, 7th ch. of William Locke (b. Apr. 12, 1748, d. Mar. 30, 1829. m. Feb. 21, 1773, Rebecca Barrett, of Carlisle, who was b. Dec. 26, 1774 & d. Dec. 15, 1831). 10th ch. of James Locke (b. June 17, 1703, d. Sept. 1, 1782. m. Jan. 11, 1727, Elizabeth Burnap**), 2nd ch. of James Locke (b. Nov. 14, 1677, d. Dec. 11, 1745. m. Dec. 5, 1700, Sarah Cutter, who was ch. of Richard & Elizabeth Cutter of Cambridge, Mass.), ch. of Dea. William Locke, b. Dec. 13, 1628, Stepney Parish, London, Eng., d. June 16, 1720. m. Dec. 12, 1655, Woburn, Mass., Mary Clarke, dau. of William & Margery Clarke.

**Elizabeth Burnap was b. May 1, 1708, d. Nov. 25, 1785, ch. of Dea. Benjamin Burnap (b. June 8, 1677, Reading, Mass. m. June 19, 1700, Elizabeth Newhall) (b. 1678, dau. of Thomas & Rebecca (Grene) Newhall), 12th ch. & 7th by 2nd wife of Robert Burnap, Jr. (bp. Nov. 28, 1627, Hudson Chapel, d. Oct. 18, 1695, Reading — came to New England with father at age 11. m. (1) Ann ?, who d. June 25, 1661, Reading; m. (2) May 28, 1662, Sarah Brown), 2nd ch. of Robert Burnap Sr. (b. abt. 1595, came to America in 1638 from Haddesden End. Great Amerell Parish, Eng., d. Sept. 27, 1688, Reading. m. abt. 1625, Ann (Agnes) Miller, dau. of Thomas Miller, M.A., of Bishops Stortford, Co. Herts, Eng. Pope's *Pioneers* gives his wife as Margaret Davis of Roxbury), 7th ch. of Thomas Burnap ("yoeman" of Stansted Abbots, living 1607 when son John was admitted to Cambridge), 3rd ch. of Thomas Burnap (living between 1537 & 1597. m. before 1564, Alice Cramphorne), 1st ch. of Thos. Burnap (living 1532-8. m. Joanna Nobbys). *Burnap-Bennet Genealogy,* by Belknap, 1925c.

Child. (2) — b. Big Rapids, Mich.

a. Arthur Lamont, b. Sept. 22, 1873. Unm. in 1930.

b. Georgia May, b. Jan. 6, 1877, res. No. Edmonds, R.D. No. 2, Wash., on July 22, 1939, when she sent in this data. m. July 29, 1901, Judge John Burton Shorett.

Child. (4) — Shorett.

(1) John Burton Jr., b. Apr. 12, 1903. m. Aug. 22, 1936, Sybil Tracy. One son, John Burton 3rd, b. Apr. 11, 1938.

(2) Lamont Judson, b. Oct. 21, 1905.

(3) Louise, b. Nov. 15, 1908. m. Sept. 10, 1927, Grove Tweed Lawrence.

Child. (2) — Lawrence.

A. Linda Lau, b. Feb. 7, 1935.

B. Judith Ann, b. May 10, 1936.

(4) Elizabeth Ann, b. Dec. 5, 1909.

6. Lucy.

7. Arthur Lockwood, b. June 28, 1851, Pontiac, Ill., d. Dec. 1, 1931, Dell Rapids, South Dakota. m. 1882, Walnut, Iowa, Florence Caroline Margeson (b. May 4, 1854, Nova Scotia, d. Feb. 28, 1931, Canto, South Dakota).

Child. (4) —b. Marcus, Iowa.

a. Leon Thomas, m. Harvarden, Iowa, Emily Gosline.

Child. (6).

(1) Given.

(2) Clara.

(3) Marguerite.

(4) Myda.

(5) Arthur.

(6) Stanley.

b. Edward Arthur, b. Oct. 25, 1888, res. (July 27, 1930, when he sent in his record), Wessington Springs, Box 145, South Dakota. m. Feb. 25, 1913, Doon, Iowa, Pearl Edna Sands (b. Mar. 4, 1891).

Child. (2).

(1) Mildred Winnie, b. Oct. 9, 1916.

(2) Florence Adelyn, b. Mar. 17, 1930.

c. Lloyd Seward, b. Sept. 28, 1892. m. Winifred Ethel Sands (b. Jan. 11, 1893).

Child. (2).

(1) Francis Vivian.

(2) Vernon Arthur.

d. Mabel, b. Feb., 1896, d. infancy.

8. Mary A., b. 1847, d. young.

9. Frank Maylon, b. Mar. 27, 1850. When he was six months old he was adopted by Judge Gray, of Ottawa, Ill., and reared under the name of Gray. He d. Apr. 2, 1927, Pueblo, Colo. m. Nov. 2, 1889, Mary McKee. (Her father, Hugh McKee, was a teacher 40 yrs. in Cincinnati, Ohio. He and wife, Mary King, both came from Ireland.)

Child. (4) — Gray.

a. Avery Joseph, b. Aug. 26, 1890. m. Oct. 9, 1911, Mabel Johnson.

b. Edward Francis, b. Jan. 26, 1894.

c. Ethel Marie, b. Aug. 13, 1896 (Artist singer).

d. James Thomas, b. Jan. 15, 1900. m. Mar. 31, 1939, Beryl French (b. July 19, 1908, Vallejo, Calif.). From Mrs. Mary Gray, of Los Angeles.

Joseph Loveless. He appears with George, John and Jeremiah in earliest records of Albany Co., N. Y., but no actual proof of his birth date and place has been found. He m. Charity Clock.

Child. (12) — Family Bible of Silas J. Loveless, 1917.

1. John, m. & had 3 ch., i.e., Orson, Mary and Homer, b. Sept. 30, 1855, m. Mar. 11, 1878, Naomi Porter.

2. Daniel, m. & had 4 ch., i.e., Lucinda, Etta, Orrin & Willis, who m. Ella Thompson. Their 4 Loveless ch. were Clara, d. young; Jennie, m. Arthur Cole; Nellie, m. Edward Ingerson; & Daniel, b. ?, d. Oct. 30, 1910, m. Mar. 30, 1896, Irene Ford (b. May 25, 1881). Their 5 Loveless ch. were Charles Daniel, b. June 9, 1897; Floy Alma, b. Aug. 30,

1899; Otis Loyd, b. Mar. 26, 1901; Daniel Leonard, b. Jan. 3, 1903; Richard Earle, b. Aug. 14, 1907.

3. Lanson.
4. Nancy.
5. Jane.
6. Mary Ann.
7. Phoebe.
8. Elizabeth.
9. Sarah.
10. Elisha, b. June 23, 1806. m. Mary Cunningham.

Child. (10).

a. Melissa, m. (1) Elias Bennett; m. (2) Leman Lamphere.

b. Charles.

c. George.

d. Jonas, d. age 14.

e. Lewis, d. age 17.

f. Alonzo, b. Sept. 14, 1836.

g. Elizabeth, b. Apr. 14, 1838. m. Caleb Shaw.

h. Sarah, b. July 17, 1840. m. Stephen VanAtten.

i. Jennie, b. Mar. 3, 1842. m. Herbert Lamb.

j. Cynthia, b. Aug. 1, 1846. m. Jan. 22, 1868, David Bort. Ch.: Ida May Bort, b. Oct. 3, 1868, m. Geo. Ecku; & Charles David Bort.

11. Amos, b. Sept. 27, 1807, d. Jan. 21, 1873, Baldwinsville, N. Y. m. Arena Brace (b. Nov. 11, 1810).

Child. (9).

a. Benjamin, b. July 24, 1831, m. Pliny Depew. 3 Loveless ch. were James, d. young; Jennie, b. June 3, 1856, m. George Russell, & had 6 Russell ch.; Augusta, b. 1858, m. Lucius Ford & had 7 Ford ch.

b. Martha, b. Apr. 19, 1833, m. Wm. Taylor. Their ch. was Louise Taylor.

c. Mary, b. Jan. 5, 1835, m. Loomis Depew.

d. Catherine, b. Feb. 7, 1837, m. as his 2nd wife, William Taylor.

e. Daniel, b. Feb. 25, 1840, m. Jane Jenkins, no ch.

f. Charity, b. Mar. 24, 1842, m. Dec. 25, 1865, Charles Bannack. 3 Bannack ch.

g. Otis, b. Jan. 21, 1845, m. Mary Smith. 2 Loveless ch.

h. Maria, b. May 7, 1847, d. young.

i. William, b. July 14, 1850, m. twice & left 5 Loveless ch.

12. Jonas, b. Aug. 2, 1809, d. Mar. 7, 1885. m. Mrs. Clarissa (Smith) Webb (b. July 27, 1819).

Child. (6) — b. Lysander, N. Y.

a. Silas J., b. Mar. 13, 1847, contributed this data in 1917 when contacted by compiler. m. Jan. 9, 1888, Mrs. Delia (Van Patten) Hapeman (b. Sept. 4, 1856).

Child. (4) — b. Cato, N. Y.

(1) Jay Silas, b. Oct. 30, 1888. m. Oct. 26, 1916, Lillian Turner.

(2) Frank V., b. Feb. 9, 1890. m. Nov. 17, 1912, Ethel Halstead.

(3) Thara Blanche, b. May 4, 1895. m. Oct. 28, 1914, Ralph R. Havens.

(4) Delia M., b. Sept. 16, 1899.

b. Philip Smith, b. Sept. 5, 1848, d. May 2, 1911. m. Apr. 24, ?, Emma Green (d. July 20, 1917).

Child. (7).

(1) Irving Philip, b. Apr. 19, 1870. m. Elizabeth Slade. Their ch. were Emma Jane, b. Nov. 15, 1892, m. June 30, 1914, Charles Heron; Elsie Elizabeth, b. July 10, 1897; and Ernest Philip, b. Nov. 18, 1898.

(2) Elmer Jones, b. Jan. 27, 1872.

(3) Nora Emeline, b. June 23, 1874, m. Mar. 15, 1899, Mr. Weldon.

(4) Henry Alvin, b. June 2, 1877, m. June 16, 1901, Georgia Walker.

Child. (4) — Weldon.

Caty Emeline, b. Dec. 10, 1900; Arthur Fayette, b.

Sept. 23, 1904; Mae Christine, b. Jan. 15, 1902, d. May 6, 1903; Blanche Olive, b. Mar. 15, 1906.

(5) Carrie Louise, b. May 3, 1879, m. Mar. 13, 1914, Martin Reinhart.

(6) Ira James, b. July 22, 1881, m. Mary Ammerman. Their 6 Loveless ch. were Howard, Laura Belle, Bernice, Esther, Morris & Clifford.

(7) Jennie May, b. May 5, 1891.

c. Jonas, Jr., b. Dec. 3, 1850, m. Ella Chamberlain.
d. Maria, b. Feb. 1, 1853, d. Aug. 28, 1855.
e. Paloma, b. Apr. 2, 1855, d. Jan 18, 1860.
f. Adalaide, b. Oct. 2, 1857, m. Fred Havens. No ch.

Georgia Records

William Lovelace, m. May 28, 1810, Jane Hunt. Columbia Co. Marriages, *Annals of Ga.*, Wilson, Vol. II.

Hist. of Pickins Co., Tate. p. 57, Jimmy Lovelace res. on Fairmount Rd., near Jasper, in 1860. p. 58, Abraham Lovelace res. on Rd. West of Jasper. p. 283, James Lovelace, one of the founders of the Methodist Church at Jasper. p. 119, Farmhand, Ga., Census of 1860; Henry Loveless, age 24; Josephine, age 20; & James, age 4½.

Thomas Loveless, b. 1800, Greenville Dist., South Carolina. Came to Ga. with wife Rebecca in 1830. Taught school & farmed. T. J. Loveless, their son, was b. 1832, Newton Co., Ga. In Co. 4, 4th Ga. Reg., 1861; Master Mason; Baptist; merchant & farmer of Buchanan, Haralson Co., Ga. m. 1857, Louisa J. Camp, dau. of Thomas & Letitia (Lindley) Camp of South Carolina. Only ch. was Robert E. Loveless. p. 1052, *Memoirs of Georgia*, Vol. I.

Abner Loveless, farmer, b. abt. 1825,* m. Nancy ? (b. abt. 1828*). Ch. were Barton, b. 1852;* Catherine, b.

1854;* Robert, b. 1856;* Amanda, b. 1856;* Benj., b. 1857;* Josephine, b. 1859.*

James Loveless, b. 1810,* m. Sarah ? (b. 1817*). Ch. were Evans, b. 1841;* Malinda, b. 1843;* Samuel, b. 1845;* Genette, b. 1847;* Martha, b. 1849;* James, b. 1851;* Sarah E., b. 1855;* Adline, b. 1857.* All these birth dates based on the ages* shown in U.S. Census of 1860 for Pickins Co., Ga.

Amos Lovelace, Revolutionary soldier of North Carolina. m. Tabithy Tomlinson. He was closely related to & presumably of the same line of descent as William Lovelace, who m. Margery Beal.* This William was of the 15th gen. in direct descent from John Lovelace, living in 1300. Their s., John, b. 1826 in North Carolina, came to Ga. in 1841 & was with Ga. Militia in Civil War, m. Martha Embry, dau. of Hezekiah Embry, pioneer of Wilkes Co., Ga. Their s., W. P. Lovelace, b. 1849 in Troup Co., Ga. A man of remarkable energy & persistence of character. Master of the shoe business. Later established a mercantile business at Rome, Ga. Failed during panic of 1874. Then built up a $16,000 tannery business. Accumulated 3 fortunes & owned a fine farm in 1882. m. 1872, Emma C. Edge, of Meriwether Co. (b. 1855, only ch. of Wm. R. & Catherine (Boyd) Edge), gr. ch. of Joseph Edge, who was b. 1803, d. 1886, Meriwether Co., m. Margaret Flint. He was s. of Nehemiah Edge of South Carolina, one of the earliest settlers in Wilkes Co. Their 7 Lovelace ch., all b. Rome, Ga., were: John W., Lewis E., Mattie B., Thomas E., Nellie M., Lillian C., Lois C. pp. 507 & 514, Vol. II, *Memoirs of Georgia.*

Kentucky Records

McCracken Co.:

Walter W. Lovelace, m. Oct. 21, 1837, Elizabeth Collins.

*p. 51, vol. 32, *Virginia Mag.*, shows Beale family to immigrant ancestor, Thos., b. before 1626.

Andrew Lovelace, m. July 7, 1836, Sarah Clifton.

George Lovelace, m. June 18, 1838, Lula Ann Morgan.

William H. Lovelace, m. Oct. 6, 1840, Melinda Lovelace.

Roby Lovelace, m. Mar. 8, 1843, Mary Ann Johnson.

Mary B. Lovelace, age 84, res. with Robert R. Hester, Revolutionary Pensioner.

Samuel Lovelace, of Allen Co., Ky. His ancestors came from Eng. to Virginia. Had 2 sons, i.e.. Henry, of Louisville, Ky.; & John, of Nashville, Tenn.

Vachel Loveless on Madison Co., Ky., tax list, 1789. p. 60, 1790 Census of Kentucky.

Kentucky Land Grants

Loveless, Young, 1838; John, 1838 & 1847; William R., 1882; John W., 1882; Isaac, 1881; C. B., 1885 & 1894; J. C., 1890; F. N., 1837; John, 1842; Loveless & Dixon, 1849; Isaac Lovlis, 1852; Abe, 1873; Alexander, 1881.

There is a town of Lovelaceville in Ballard Co., Ky.

Town of Lovelace, in Troup Co., Ga.; Wilkes Co., N. C. (15 miles from Wilkesboro); Hill Co., Tex.

William Madison Loveles. He had brothers and sisters: Mary; Elva; Parenthia, who m. Wm. Abernathy; John — his son John resided East Lake Station, Birmingham, in 1930; Vincent, who had a s. Andrew; Sarah, who m. Benj. Ellis, of Bucksville; and Mary A., who d. Mar. 30, 1857, having m. Mar. 22, 1855, John Crowley, of Bucksville, Ala. He d. Mar. 19, 1905. Their dau., Sarah Jane Crowley, b. Mar. 3, 1857, d. Aug. 9, 1888, m. July 31, 1873, W. L. George.

4 George ch. were: Thomas Wesley, b. July 28, 1876; Wilmirth Pairlee, b. Nov. 6, 1880; David Walter, b. June 7, 1884; Robert Leonidas, b. May 6, 1887.

(Data recd. 1923 from J. L. Crowley, of Bessimer, R.D., Ala., who was son of John Crowley by 2nd marriage.)

Milton Loveless, b. 1820. Came from Charleston, S. C.,

before the Civil War to Birmingham. His 7 Loveless ch. include John Wesley, b. Feb. 19, 1868, m. Feb. 15, 1894, Alma Jane Waldrep (b. July 30, 1874). Their son, L. Manly Loveless, of 683 Broad St., Newark, N. J., sent this data in 1922.

Child. (4) — of William Madison Loveless.

1. Ozias Griffin, b. Nov. 30, 1833, near Bessimer (old Jonesboro), Alabama. He d. May 11, 1911. He moved to Kansas a few years before the Civil War, then moved back to Tupelo, Miss., before departing for the Confederate Army.

Child. (4) — b. Jonesboro.

a. James William, b. July 24, 1853, d. May 9, 1924. For 50 yrs. minister of Baptist church and a Mason for 49 yrs.

Child. (2).

(1) Ira Claud, b. Feb. 12, 1891. Of Loveless Coal Co., 6700 First Ave. North, Birmingham. Res. (1937), 5704 6th Ave., South Birmingham, Ala. He invited compiler to visit in his home and carry on research in the South.

Child. (2).

A. Ira Claud, Jr., b. June 29, 1909.

B. Inez, b. Sept. 12, 1917, m. Ralph Loveless, son of Tom Loveless, of Bessimer, Ala. Not related as far as known by her father, Ira Claud Loveless.

(2) E. F., b. Aug. 8, 1898.

b. John Livingstone, b. Jan. 9, 1859.

c. Andrew Milton, b. July 24, 1866, d. June 16, 1914. Left children, Granville Loveless (res. Oklahoma City, Okla.), and Herbert Loveless (res. Utah, Ala.) in 1932.

d. Judson Madison, b. Feb. 4, 1874, d. Jan. 4, 1894.

2. Livingstone Lightfoot, m. Mary Dailey, of Montevallo, Ala. 2 Loveless ch. were William & Loubenia.

3. Nancy, m. James Bailey.

4. Jane, m. Roberic Dickey.

Samuel Loveless. "He came from New England with his parents and they settled in Trumble Co., Ohio, near Price's

Mills." C. B. Loveless, in 1924. b. May 16, 1791, d. Mar. 17, 1867, m. Hilda Martin (b. Dec. 17, 1804, d. Mar. 25, 1881).

Child. (8).

1. Athalia, b. Mar. 8, 1824, d. 1908.
2. Lucy, m. Mr. Graves, last known res. in California.
3. Martin Doughton, b. Oct. 9, 1830, Price's Mills, Ohio. d. Warren, Ohio. m. Malinda C. Wilson (b. Mar. 12, 1832, Paris Twp., Portage Co., Ohio. d. Oct. 8, 1917, dau. of Austin Wilson, of Connecticut).

Child. (8).

+a. Frank W., b. 1854, m. Emma Hiltabeddle.
b. Fred, b. 1856, d. 1880.
c. Lucy, b. Jan. 1, 1859, d. 1865.
d. Mary, b. Sept. 15, 1861, d. Sept. 17, 1904, unm.
+e. Charles B., b. 1864, m. Irene Campbell.
f. William Henry, b. May 15, 1869, on a farm in Bloomfield Twp., Trumbull Co., Ohio. d. Feb. 25, 1944. m. (1) Sept. 20, 1894, Etta Blanche Myers, (b. Feb. 3, 1874, Bourbon, Ind. d. Dec. 19, 1923).

Child. (4).

(1) William Henry, Jr., b. Aug. 2, 1895, m. Mary Francis Barley, who was b. May 28, 1895.
(2) Ralph Myers, b. Nov. 7, 1896, m. Apr. 28, 1923, Mary Helen Tompkins, who was b. July 19, 1900.
(3) Mildred, b. Mar. 14, 1898.
(4) Edith Blanche, b. Aug. 12, 1899, m. Oct., 1924, Earl King.

g. Annie B., b. 1871, d. 1876.
h. Richard, b. 1873, d. 1878.
4. Samuel Kinion, b. July 25, 1833, d. Oct. 12, 1912.
5. James, m. & had child, all d.; no record.
6. George, b. Dec. 25, 1842, d. June 29, 1875.
7. Julia, b. 1845, m. Mr. Graham.
8. Alice, b. 1849, d. 1918, unm.

Frank W. Loveless, Martin Doughton (1830), Samuel (1791). b. Jan. 6, 1854. Res. in 1948, 150 Central St., Akron, Ohio. m. Emma Hiltabeddle.

Child. (12).

1. Frank W., Jr., b. Apr. 15, 1876, m. July 10, 1900, to ?, & had 4 ch., i.e.:

a. Clara, b. Apr. 26, 1901.

b. Malinda, b. July 31, 1905.

c. Francis, b. May 9, 1909.

d. Charles B., b. June 22, 1912.

2. Rachel Anna, b. Oct. 3, 1877, m. Dec. 25, 1901, Mr. Heasley. 5 Heasley ch. are:

a. Paul B., b. Oct. 22, 1902.

b. Frederick, b. Mar. 11, 1909.

c. Robert, b. Jan. 16, 1912.

d. William, b. ?

e. Helen, b. Jan. 22, 1918.

3. Ward, b. July 3, 1878, m. Mar. 1, 1917, Carrie Marks. No ch.

4. James, b. Jan. 28, 1880, m. July 23, 1911, Nellie Shaw.

Child. (2).

a. Emma Mildred, b. July 6, 1913.

b. Mark Wilson, b. Oct. 5, 1915.

5. Richard, b. Sept. 14, 1882, m. Nov., 1920, Eva Mizner. Their ch., Betty, b. Feb. 27, 1923.

6. Harry, b. June 20, 1884, m. Apr. 27, 1905, Beulah Huntley. They have 4 ch.

a. Bertha Christine, b. Aug. 29, 1906.

b. Doris Olive, b. Feb. 10, 1908.

c. Stanley Alfred, b. Mar. 29, 1909.

d. Ruth Frances, b. Sept. 12, 1910.

7. Sarah Jane, b. Apr. 26, 1885, m. Apr. 20, 1916, Louis Arkins.

8. Carl, b. Aug. 28, 1887.

9. Helen, b. Jan. 18, 1890, m. Aug. 20, 1913, Nathaniel Helchin.

10. Robert, b. Mar. 5, 1893, m. Oct. 11, 1917, Rosalia Fraver.

11. Lester, b. Apr. 15, 1895.

12. Allison, b. Mar. 3, 1897.

Charles B. Loveless, Martin Doughton (1830), Samuel (1791). b. Jan. 14, 1864, Waren, Ohio. Res. 1948, when he contributed data, 256 Monroe St., Warren. Pres. of Warren Iron and Steel Co. p. 270, vol. II, *History of Youngstown & the Mahoning Valley, Ohio.* Butler, 1921, shows his photo & biography. Res. in 1921, "Loveless Colony," North Mahoning Ave. Extension, Warren, Ohio. m. Oct. 20, 1885, Irene Campbell (b. Aug. 12, 1865, dau. of Jerome T. Campbell).

Child. (7).

1. Gertrude Irene, b. Mar. 2, 1888, unm. in 1924.

2. Edwin B., b. Jan. 20, 1890, d. Feb. 25, 1890.

3. Mary Louise, b. Jan. 11, 1891, m. Oct. 20, 1913, William James Kerr.

4. Ellen Malinda, b. Jan. 25, 1893, m. Oct. 20, 1915, Wm. J. Wolford. Their ch., Mildren Irene Wolford, b. Sept. 2, 1919.

5. Charles Campbell, b. July 14, 1895, m. June 5, 1917, Theresa Tweedale.

Child. (2).

a. Charles Tweedale, b. May 25, 1919.

b. Barbara Ann, b. Mar. 6, 1922.

6. Philip Martin, b. Apr. 4, 1897, m. Nov. 4, 1917, Maybellé Stein.

Child. (2).

a. Philip Martin, Jr., b. May 7, 1921.

b. John Austin, b. Mar. 3, 1924.

7. Lucy Packard, b. Apr. 8, 1899, m. Feb. 3, 1919, David D. Howe.

ONE LINE OF ANCESTRY
of
GOVERNOR FRANCIS LOVELACE, 129TH GENERATION FROM ADAM; FROM EARLY EUROPEAN AND ROYAL ANCESTRIES OF AMERICAN PIONEERS.

129—Col. Francis Lovelace, b. 1620, d. 1683; Gov. N. Y., m. Blanche Talbot
128—Anne Barne, b. 1587, d. 1633, m. Sir William Lovelace* (134 gen. fr. Adam)
127—Anne Sandys, b. 1570, m. Sir Wm. Barne*
126—Edwin Sandys, Archbishop of York, m. (2) Cecily Wilsford*
125—Margaret Dixon, m. Wm. George Sandys*
124—Anne Roos, m. John Dixon.
123—Thomas Roos, of Wetherslak, Co. York, m. Anne Thornborough*
122—Robert Roos of Dent
121—Robert Roos, Baron of Kendall
120—Sir Robert de Roos
119—Sacer de Roos
118—Sir Robert de Roos
117—Robert Fursan de Roos, Lord of Werke Castle, m. Isabel d' Albini.*
116—Baron Wm. de Roos, 5th Lord of Hamlake, m. Lucretia Fitz Piers
115—Isabel of Scotland, m. (2) Robt. de Roos, 4th Baron.
114—Wm. "The Lion," King of Scotland.
113—Prince Henry of Northumberland m. Ada, dau. Wm. 2nd Earl of Warren.*
112—David I, m. Matilda, dau. Waltheof of Northumberland.
111—Malcolm Conmore, King, m. (2) Margaret Atheling* (Saxon Royalty)
110—Duncan I, King 1034-1040, murdered by MacBeth
109—Beatrix, m. Crinan the Thane.
108—Malcolm II, King 1005 to 1034
107—Kenneth II, King 971 to 995
106—Malcolm I, King 942 to 956
105—Donald, King 889 to 903
109—Constantine I, slain 878
103—Kenneth I, MacAlpine
102—Alpynus, d. beheaded 834
101—Achaius, succeeded Solwatheus
100—Ethfyn, succ. Murdocus.
99—Eugenius VII, m. Spontana
98—Eugenius V, succ. his uncle
97—Dongarus
96—Donewaldus (Donald)
95—Eugenius IV, succ. Kennethus Keir.
94—Aldenus (Aidan) (Aldan)
93—Gabhran
92—Eochy (Adhaius)
91—Dongardus, succ. his brother
90—Fergus Mor Mac Earca
89—Muireadhach, m. Earc
88—Eoghan, d. 465

ONE LINE OF ANCESTRY — GOV. FRANCIS LOVELACE

87—Nial of the Nine Hostages
86—Eochaidh of Muighmheadhoin
85—Muireadhach Tireach
84—Flacha Sraibhtine
83—Cairbre Liffeachair
82—Cormac Ulfhada
81—Airt-ean-fhear
80—Conn of the Hundred Battles
79—Feidhlimidh Rechtmhar
78—Tuathal Teachtmhar
77—Fiacha Finnfolaidh
76—Fearadhach Finnfeachtnach
75—Crimhthann Niadhnair
74—Luhaidh Sriabh-nderg
73—Bress-nar-lothar
72—Eochaigh Feidhleach
71—Fionn (Finn)
70—Fionnlogh (Finnlogha)
69—Roignen Ruadh
68—Easaman Eamhna
67—Enna Alghneach
66—Aeghnun Tuirmheach Teamhrach
65—Eochaidh Ailtleathan
64—Oilioll Caisfhiaclach
63—Connla Ceamh, "Connla the Comely"
62—Irereo (Iaranngleo Fathach)
61—Melghe Molbthach
60—Cobhthach Cael Braegh
59—Ugain Mor (Huganius Magnus)

* * *

ONE LINE OF ANCESTRY

of

SIR WILLIAM LOVELESS OF THE VIRGINIA COMPANY, 132ND GENERATION FROM ADAM; FROM EARLY EUROPEAN AND ROYAL ANCESTRIES OF AMERICAN PIONEERS.

132—Sir William Lovelace, b. 1583, d. 1627, m. Anne Barne* (129th fr. Adam)
131—Elizabeth Aucher, b. 1565, d. 1627, m. Sir William Lovelace,* b. 1561
130—Sir Edward Aucher, of Bishopsbourne, Kent, b. 1539, m. Mabell Wrothe*
129—Sir Anthony Aucher, of Otterden, Kent, m. Affre Cornwallis*
128—James Aucher, m. Alice Hills*
127—John Aucher, m. Margaret Church
126—Henry Aucher, m. Alice Boleyne
125—Henry Aucher, m. Mary St. Leger*
124—Elizabeth Diggs, m. Henry Aucher*
123—Julianna Northwode, m. John Diggs
122—John de Northwode, m. Joan Hart*
121—Julianna Saye, m. Sir Roger de Northwode, 2nd Baron, b. 1307*
120—Idonia Leybourne, m. Geoffrey de Saye, b. 1281, d. 1322*

119—Sir Wm. de Laybourne, Constable of Pevensay Castle
118—Idonia Voount, m. Roger Leybourne
117—Isabel Fetz Goeffrey, m. Robert Vipount, d. of wounds at Lewes
116—Isabel Bigod, m. (2) John Fitz (Piers) Goeffrey
115—Hon. Sir Ralph Bigod, m. Berta de Fernival, dau. Lord Sheffield
114—Maud Marshall, m. Hugh Bigod*
113—Isabel Clare, m. Wm. Marshall*
112—Princess Eva, of Leinster, m. Richard de Clare, "The Strong Bow"
111—Dermot Mac Morough, 49th and last King of Leinster, & 58th Christian King
110—Donuch Mac Morough, King of Dublin, slain 1115
109—Murcha, a sea warrior, d. 1090
108—Diarmuid, 177th Milesian Monarch of Ireland, d. 1072
107—Diarmuid, King 13 yrs., d. 997
106—Donal, slain 974 by Ossorians
105—Ceallach, slain 945 at Dublin
104—Ceneth, King 13 yrs.
103—Cairbre, slain 876
102—Diarmuid
101—Hugh
100—Rudgal
99—Onchu
98—Faolchu
97—Faelan
96—Siollan
95—Eoghan Caoth
94—Nathach, Baptised by St. Patrick
93—Criathann Cass, slain 484
92—Eanna Ceannsalach
91—Labhradh
90—Breasal Bealach
89—Fiach Baicheda
88—Cathair Mor, 109th Monarch of Ireland, m. (3) Landabaria, dau. of Conn of 100 Battles
87—Felin Fiorurglas
86—Cormac Gealtech
85—Niadh (nia) Corb
84—Cu-Corb, 4 yrs. King of Leinster
83—Mogh-Corb
82—Conchobhar Abhraoidhruaidh
81—Fionn-File (Irish poet)
80—Ros
79—Fergus Fairge
78—Sedna. Built city of Rath Alinne
77—Luy
76—Bressal Breac
75—Fiada Fobrug
74—Olioll Glas
73—Fearach Foghlas
72—Nuadh Falaid
71—Olioll
70—Art
69—Mogh-Art
68—Crimthamm
67—Felim Fortium
66—Fergus Fortamhail
65—Breassal
64—Aeneas Ollamh
63—Olioll Bracan
62—Labhrach Longseach

61—Olioll Aine
60—Laeghaire Lore
59—Ugaine Mor (Hugony)
59—Ugaine Mor (Huganius Magnus), had 22 sons and 3 daughters. Slain by his own brother, Babhbhchadh
58—Eochaidh Baudhach
57—Duach Ladhgrach, 59th monarch of Ireland, reigned 10 yrs
56—Flacha Tolgrach, reigned 10 yrs
55—Muireadhach Bolgrach, reigned 13 months & slain by Enda Dearg
54—Simon Breac (Simeon Breac)
53—Aedhan Glas
52—Nuidhat Finnfail
51—Gaillghaigh, 37th monarch
50—Oilioll Ollchain
49—Sirna, reigned 150 years
48—Dian (Denius)
47—Raitheachtaigh, 22nd monarch
46—Maen (Maon) (Maine)
45—Aengus Olmuchadha
44—Flacha Labhrainne
43—Smiorghull
42—Eanbroth; in his time the kingdom was divided into 2 parts by a line drawn from Drogheda to Limerick
41—Tighernmas; reigned 1620-1543 B.C. 77 years. In his time Uchadan, an artificer, smelted the first gold
40—Follach; kept from succ. as monarch by slayer of his father, who usurped his place
39—Eithriel; 11th monarch, slain at Raeire, by Conmhael
38—Irial Faidh; d. at Magh-Muaidhe
37—Heremon, 7th son but 3rd to leave issue. m. Tea, of Spain, from who was named the famous Hall of Tara. She was direct descendant of King David of Israel. The story of the Stone of Scone also originated in his time. Conquered Ireland & became ancestor of the Kins, nobility & gentry of the Kingdom of Connaught
36—Milidh (Galamh) b. in Spain; visited Cynthia & became commander of the forces there. He & sons went to Ireland. Known as Milesius of Spain & his descendants as the Milesian Kings of Ireland
35—Bile; had brother Ithe
34—Breoghan; had 10 sons
33—Bratha, b. in Gothia, came to Spain
32—Deachaidh (Deagh), King of Getulia
31—Earchaidh (Areadh), King
30—Ealloit (Alladh), King
29—Nuadha (Nuadhad), King
28—Neanul (Nenuall), King
27—Eibric (Febric Glas), King
26—Aghnonfhionn (Agnen Fionn)
25—Eibhear (Heber) Gluinfhionn
24—Laimhfhionn (Lamhfionn)
23—Aghnon (Agnan)
22—Tat (Tait), King of Scythia
21—Aghnaman (Oghaman), King

20—Beodhaman (Beouman), King
19—Eibhear (Heber) Scot (Scutt)
18—Sruth (Sru), d. Isle of Crete.
17—Asruth (Easru), b. in Egypt
16—Gaodhal (Gaedheal)
15—Niul
14—Proeniusa Farsa
13—Baoth (Baath)
12—Magog
11—Japheth
10—Noah
9—Lemech
8—Methuselah
7—Enoch
6—Jared
5—Mahalaeel
4—Cainan
3—Henos (Enos)
2—Seth
1—Adam; Created

*These ancestries carried out through further generations.

CAUTION — Remember this is a genealogy not a list of kings; so apparent discrepancies in dates only mean another family were the kings during the intermediate periods.

The use of this material is limited strictly to the holder and for his immediate family records and is not to be copied and passed on to others.

Family and Name Index

Abrams, 141-142.
Alice, m. Robert **Loveless.**
Ella, m. Will **Dorsett.**
John.
Liela.
Sally, m. Bob **Mooney.**
William.

Armstrong, 73.
Vernon Martin, m. Hazel May **Morrow.**

Asher, 64.
Elizabeth Anna, m. Charles **Cole.**
George Washington, m. Sarah **Rine.**
James Mason.
John R.
Katherine, m. Weston **Moore.**
Martha Jane, m. Geo. **Nickerson.**
Mary Rachel.
Matilda Katherine, m. James **Jipson.**
Nancy Elon, m. Alexander **Sharer.**
Rachel.
Sarah Louise, m. John **Brashford.**

Aucher, 41.
Anthony.
Jane.

Averson, 79.
Rebecca Irene.
Ruth.
Samuel Paul.
William Robert.

Baker, 63.
James.
Nancy Jane.
Victoria.

Beake, 15-16.
Eliza, m. Thomas **Doner.**
Henry, m. Frances **Billiard.**
Richard, m. Colebury **Lovelace.**

Bedersen, 84.
Hans, m. Johanna **Nielsen.**

Beveridge, 110.
Broman.
Helen
Robert.

Bills, 76.
Alice Margaret.
Glenne.
Howard S.
Ray L.
Robert D.

Blanding, 96.
Arthur Robert.
Clarence Freeman.
Doris Mabel.
Leo Randall.
Morris LeRoy.

Bulstrode, 16-17.
Henry.
Samuel.
Simon.

Burnap, 177.
Elizabeth.
Dea. Benjamin, m. Elizabeth **Newhall.**
Thos., m. Joanne **Nobbys.**

Burt, 95.
Hazel.
Marim.

Busby, 146.
William Good.

Campbell, 79.
Audrey.
Mary Audrey

Chaloner, 34.
Francis.
Jane.
Margaret.
Mary.

Cheney, 10-12.
Agnes.
Astley, m. Rebecka **Horne.**
Dorothea.
Elizabeth.
Francisca, m. Thos. **Swalman.**
Humphrey, m. Alice **Wooten.**
John.
Johne's m. Judithe **Wood.**
Jonas, m. Margaret **Finche.**
Robert, m. Anna **Lovelace.**
Roger of Hingham & Milsted.

Christensen, 84.
Anne, m. Rasmus **Larsen.**
Christen, m. Maren **Sorensen.**

Clasar, 47.
Anne, m. Sir John **Poyntz.**
Johanna, m. John **Rampayne.**
Julianna, m. Thos. **Sage.**

Cogswell, 176.
Samuel, m. Eunice **Loveless.**
Aaron, m. Lydia Ann **Beckwith.**
Samuel Beckwith.
Ray Beckwith.
Edbert Cleveland.

Collins, 121.
Albert, m. Miss **Shaw.**
John.
Wm. Lovelace, m. (1)Carsander **Talbert** (2) Sarah **Allen** (3) Alberta Jane **Dozier.**

Cook, 115.
Cate P., m. Murray **Gordon.**
Simeon.

Crawford, 146.
Louisa, m. Robert **Busby.**

Curtis, 76.
Dale.
Donald L.
Geraldine.
Owen Keith.
Reed F.

Darby, 99.
Elizabeth.
John D.
Lucinda.
Margaret.
Nancy.
Sarah J.
William O.

Denson, 141.
Lennie.
Sarah m. Sam **Abrams.**

Edwards, 71.
Lucile Elizabeth, m. Ivan Blaine **Gasser.**
Margaret Ruth.
Melancthon Jenkins, m. Francis **Filler.**
Thomas Walter, m. Constantie Thatcher **Nibley.**

Elmer, 67-68.
Etta Jane, m. Mr. **Nesbitt.**
George W.
Hyman.
James W.
John David.
Lillie May.
Lucenda Rachel.
Lucius A.
Ruth Ann.

Engeham, 6-7.
Anna, m. Harles **Harles.**
Edwin, m. Eliza **Euelin.**
Mary, m. George **Morton.**
Rowlandus.
Thomas, m. Prescilla **Honeywood.**

Ferguson, 71-72.
Katherine Elizabeth.
Samuel Jenkins, m. Ann Ora **Fishburn.**
Sarah Alene Maurine.
Thomas Stewart.

Fletcher, 110.
Mrs. Alice (Alexander) **Hetherton.**
Charles.
Mrs. Eliza **Reed.**
Mrs. Lottie **Page.**

Gorsuch, 51-52.
Ann, m. (1) Capt. Thomas **Todd** (2) Capt. David **Jones** (3) Capt. John **Oldton.**
Catherine Ruth, m. Wm. **Whitby.**
Charles, m. (1) Sarah **Cole** (2) Ann **Hawkins.**
Daniel.
Elizabeth, m. Howell **Powell.**
Frances.
John.
Lovelace, m. (1) Rebecca **Preston** (2) Hannah **Walker.**
Richard, m. Elizabeth **Roe.**
Robert.
William m. Catherine **Morgan.**

Graham, 102.
Isaac.
Simphony.

Hales, 8.
Edward, m. (1) Maria **Ford** (2) Martha **Hales.**
Edward m. Margaret **Honeywood.**
Elizabeth, m. Wm. **Austin.**
Jane, m. Thos. **Honeywood.**
John, m. Mary **Harne.**
Robert.
William.

Hansen, 82-84.
Anders, m. Volbert **Nielsen.**
Hans, m. Karen **Larsen.**
Lora, m. Abelone **Hansen.**

Hayne, 48.
Ann.
Daniel.
Elizabeth.
Francis.
John.
Katherine.
Mary, m. Prof. Ellis **Duxbury.**

Heasley, 187.
Paul B., b. 1902.
Frederick, b. 1909.
Robert, b. 1912.
William.
Helen.

Held, 89.
Alice Deon, m. Orville **Rolfus.**
Carrol Robbin.
Donald Miles.
Keith Johnson.

Hercy, 14.
Anne, m. Hugh **Calverly.**
John, m. Mary **Anger.**

Holmes, 75.
Jean.
Kent.

Honeywood, 3-4.
Bennett, m. John **Drylande.**
Bennett, m. John **Turney.**
Christopher, m. Anne **Boine.**
Isabell, m. Christopher **Lashforde.**
Joane, m. **Ferrys.**
Joanne, m. Roger **Moone.**
John, m. Joanne **Perry.**
Margaret, m. Edward **Hales.**
Robert, m. Mary **Atwater.**
Thomas, m. Margaret **Belding.**

Hoo, 15.
Robert Loo, m. Hanice Fitz **Warren.**
Thomas, m. daughter of John **Newnham** (or **Newman**, or **Newnan**).
Thomas Lo m. Agnes **Wawton.**
Thomas Loo, m. Elizabeth St. **Leger.**
William, m. Alice St. **Omer.**

Horan, 147.
Virginia Queen, m. James S. **Smith.**
John Colbert, Jr.
George Parks.
Paul William.
Dorris.

Hunt, 150.
Jesse Malvern, m. Amelia Louise **Jones.**
Mildred, m. Wm. Anderson **Steward.**
Margaret.
Joann.
Henry Franklin, m. Ruby Mae **Cooper.**

Edwin F., m. Doris **Balcher.**
Eddie.
Norwood Ehn, m. May Jo **Coleman.**
J. H., m. Vera **Gregory.**
Betty Carolyn

Huntley, 103.
Eliza Jane.
John Lavator.
Mary Ann.

Jenkins, 71-72.
Anna Learl, m. Samuel Stewart **Ferguson.**
Caroline May, m. Samuel D. **Clinton.**
Caroline Pond.
Catherine Edith.
Florence Elizabeth, m. Ralph **Young.**
Harry Loveless, m. Genevieve (?).
Howard McClennen, m. Belv **Breiner.**
Ida Elizabeth, m. Paul Victor **Nash.**
James.
Margaret Matilda, m. Thomas M. **Edwards.**
Nancy Catherine.
Thomas Ray, m. (1) Louisa **Jenkins** (2) Harriet **Pond.**
Thomas Ray Jr.

Jennings, 132.
Anna Norine.
Patricia Ellen, m. Ira A. **Hollister.**
Ravis Jackson, m. Eugene **Thompson.**

Johnson, 89.
Alice Malena, m. Jacques **Held.**

Johnson, 117.
Charles Edward.
Paul Carlton.

Johnson, 75.
Kay.

Johnson, 160.
Allen.
Azelea
Kate
Phillip.

Kilmer, 113.
Ruth.

Kirby, 161.
Louis.
Doria Louise.

Lampkin, 171.
Rachel, m. Lovelace **Haley.**

Locke, 177.
Sally.
William, m. Rebecca **Bannett.**

Lockridge, 143.
Charles J., m. Ida **Harris.**
Cora Belle, m. Harvey N. **Weatherby.**
Gertrude, m. Forest E. **Kibler.**
Jesse Smith.
Mary Lee.
Thomas J., m. Neva **Taff.**

Lovelace-Loveless, etc.

A

169—Aaron, m. Maryim **Blaylock.**
182—Abner, m. Nancy (?).
73-74—Alfred Alexander, m. Rometta Ann **Davis.**
157—Alfred M., m. Anna **Wilkins.**
160—Allen, m. Louisa Jane **Lewis.**
127—Allen, m. (1) Elizabeth Claiborne **Barrett** (2) Eleanor Frazier **Ramsey.**
124—Amanda Brooks, m. James **Robinson.**
171—Amey, m. John **Owen.**
183—Amos.
11—Anna, m. Robert **Cheney.**
51—Ann (e), m. Rev. John **Gorsuch.**
109—Ariel C., m. Eliza **Gray (Grey).**
174—Arthur S., m. Ida Ludington **Burke.**
163—Asa, m. (1) Miss **Bashford** (2) Polly **Cargill.**

B

61—Benjamin Franklin, m. Hannah Jane **Haynes.**

145—Blessingame.

C

91—Carol Ann.

166—Catherine, m. Myron Bly **Hatch.**

166—Chancey A., m. Lizzie **Conkle.**

158—Charles, m. Caroline **Reed.**

172—Charles, m. Mrs. Bridgett **McLaughlin (Macklothlin).**

163—Charles, m. Etta Claiborne **Thomas.**

174—Charles Albert, Jr., m. Mary Alice **Lee.**

188—Charles B., m. Irene **Campbell.**

79—Charles Gilbert, m. Emma Jane **Curtis.**

133—Christopher.

D

94—Daniel, m. Ann **Parish.**

114—Daniel Douglas, m. Prudence **Jenkins.**

159—Darkus, m. Wm. **Gehegan.**

73—David Henry, m. (1) Emily **Peay** (2) Annie Gertrude **Smith.**

158—Delos Wheeler.

69—Desert Matilda, m. "Dock" **Grey.**

E

88—Eliza Viola, m. Miles Partridge **Johnson.**

176—Elnathan, m. Mary Ida **Lowell.**

166—Emma O., m. Wilbur Tobias **Caldwell.**

F

106—Florance, m. John Edwin **Robertson.**

54—Francis (Col. & Gov.), m. Blanche **Talbot.**

36—Francis, m. (1) Elizabeth **Rogers** (2) Anne **Rogers.**

197—Frank W., m. Emma **Hiltabeddle.**

165—Frederick, m. Mrs. Hazel Kirk Weaver **Briggs.**

G

108—George, m. (1) Eliza **Martin** (2) Phoebie A. **Hinnman.**

101—George, m. Ruama (?).

91—Glenn Le Roi, m. Edythe Marie **Flower.**

69—Harriet Ann, m. Horace **Beebe.**

33—Henry.

176—Henry, m. Patty Marinda **Thompson.**

87—Hyrum Smith, m. (1) (?) (2) Eliza Jane **Wimmer.**

I

152—Isaac, m. Elizabeth **Reimble.**

151—Isaac Newton.

J

122—James, m. Mary **Stapler.**

164—James Taylor, m. Jane **Harmon.**

69—James Washington, m. (1) Matilda Elizabeth **McClellan** (2) Mary **Britton** (3) Josephine **Caldwell.**

93—Jeremiah.

157—Jesse Crenshaw.

117-118—Joel J., m. Helen M. **Johnson.**

1—John

26—John, m. (1) Margaret **Wombwell** (2) Mary **Harmon.**

20—John (Lord), m. Lady Ann **Wentworth.**

56—John.

57—John, m. Eliza **Holden.**

59—John, m. (1) Rachael **Van Hook** (2) Mrs. Zoduca (William) **Van Hook.**

65-66—John, m. (1) Rachel Mahalah **Anderson** (2) Sarah Corina Elmer **Williams** (3) Mary Pippard **Gange.**

119—John Baptist, m. Eleanor (?).

150—John James, m. Clarissa **Williamson.**

98-99—Joseph.

65—Joseph, m. Dorothy **Rogers.**

179—Joseph, m. Charity **Clock.**

72—Joseph Wilbur, m. Mary **Johnson.**

91—Justin Anderson, m. (1) Alice **Stark** (2) Eliza Ann **Jones.**

136—Joseph, m. Sarah **Offord.**

69—Juliet Elizabeth, m. Abraham **Conner.**

L

124—Lucius C. Beall, m. Obedience **Robinson.**

148—Lydia Sophronia, m. George W. **Parker.**

M

175—Marcia, m. William **Updike.**

74—Maria Adrena, m. William Thomas **Jones.**

75—Martha Alice, m. Frank **Schierer.**

90—Martin Elmer, m. Mary Lovina **Dummick.**

136—Mary Amelia, m. Daniel **Caldwell.**

158—Mary Anna, m. Alexander **Shreve.**

164—Minnie Imogene, m. Hiram **Converse.**

157—Mortimer Nathan, m. Josephine **Wheeler.**

P

75—Parley Oscar, m. Helen Adelia **Webb.**

75—Parley Pratt, m. (1) Martha Ann **Perry** (2) Eliza Ann **Cloward.**

152—Perry, m. (1) May **Ward** (2) Virginia **Miller** (3) Molly **Sims** (4) Elizabeth (?).

166-167—Pickney Wilson, m. Esther A. **Skinner.**

156—Polly, m. Neodiah **Adams.**

R

162—Reson Lord, m. Anna M. **Hadden.**

8—Richard (Col.), m. a dau. of **Eynsham.**

13—Richard, m. Anne **Warde.**

17—Richard, m. (1) Katherine **Hill** or **Hely** (2) Margaret **Dodsworth.**

147—Robert Bailey, m. Nancy Alice **Abrams.**

90—Rosa Alba, m. Wm. Hill **Searls.**

S

185-186—Samuel, m. Hilda **Martin.**

71—Sarah Louise, m. Thomas **Jenkins.**

70—Sarah Vermin, m. Mr. **Cluff.**

96—Solomon, m. (1) Harriet Augusta **Thompson** (2) Ann Eliza **Conover.**

104—Solomon, m. Mary Mores **Goss.**

111—Stephen, m. Miss **Matthews.**

158—Sylvester, m. Marietta **Reed.**

T

29—Thomas, m. (1) Elizabeth **Lewknor** (2) Elizabeth **Clement.**

99-100—Thomas, m. Sarah Ann **Sprouels.**
134—Thomas, m. Margaret (?).
3—Thomazine Mary, m. Thomas **Honeywood.**

U

70—Urrice Amelia.

V

69—Valerie Alice, m. John **Farer.**

W

183—Walter W., m. Elizabeth **Collins.**
23—William, m. Lora **Peckham.**
37—William, m. Alice (Stevens) **Shawe.**
40—William, m. Elizabeth **Aucher.**
43—William, m. Anne **Barne (s).**
61-62—William, m. Rachael **Van Hook.**
137—William (of Henley).
138—William (of Kilham).
153—William, m. Margaret **Long.**
116-117—William Dudley, m. Cornelia A. **Simon.**
78-79—William Duncan, m. Rebecca **Gaines.**
80—William Duncan, Jr., m. Pearl Rebecca **Cunningham.**
120—William, Sr., m. Margaret **Beal.**
121—William, Jr., m. (?).
164—William Hanley, m. Laura **Mahar.**
158—William Randolph.
165—William Warren, m. Diantha **Merrill.**
92—Willis, m. Louise **Jones.**
169—Wilson Hill.

Madson, 74.
Bruce.
Ila Geneal.
Leah, m. Albert Edward **Montgomery.**
Mary Ila, m. Joseph Virl **Martin.**
Mochsens
Richard.

Monins, 30-31.
Edwin, m. Elizabeth **Lovelace.**
Eliza.
Francis.
Mary.
Priscilla.
William, m. Jane **Twisden.**

Montgomery, 74.
Margaret Ruth.

Moore, 65.
James Wesley.
Katherine Permelia, m. Nathan **Yates.**
Mary Elizabeth.
Sarah Frances.
Wm. Preston.

Morgan, 161.
Mattie m. (1) Lloyd **Starky,** (2) Fred G. **Blevins.**
Margaret Elizabeth m. Harold O'Dell **Weeks.**

Moyne, 16.
Celliberry, m. Hhos. **Bulstrode.**
Simon, m. Jane **Burgoine.**

McBeth, 78.
Barbara.
Blanche, m. Ray **Hauser.**
Carol Jack, m. Rowena (Searls) **Pype.**
Edison Leland, m. Leora **Reece.**
Ned.
Paul Maurice.
Wm. Gordon, m. Lola **Davis.**

McKinney, 129-130.
Benjamin Franklin.
Elizabeth, m. Elkbert **Pool.**
George Crawford, m. Mollie **Thorpe.**

Virginia, m. (1) James Harvey **Scott** (2) Myron John **Turner.**

McPeak, 109.
Ella Mae, m. **Franklin.**
Harold, m. Harriet **Brunyer.**
Joel.
Susan.

Nielsen, 82.
Annie Bengten, m. Hans Marcus **Petersen.**
Rasmus, m. Anne Charlotte **Johnson.**

Nielson, 87.
Birdie Lee, m. James A. **Vendevere.**
Dorothy May.
Gene.
Lucile, m. Ray **Hayden.**
Sarah Victoria.
Wendell, m. Elizabeth Slater **Hazard.**

Parker, 125.
Sue Mildred.
William Madison, m. Christina **Simpson.**

Petersen, 81-83.
Christian, m. Abelone **Jorgensen.**
Christien.
Niels.

Poole, 130.
Earl.
George.
Mattie, m. Mr. **McKinney.**
Verna, m. Mr. **Jameson.**
William.

Reed, 114-115.
Carrie, M.
Colby.
Colby, m. Florence **DeLong.**
Curtis E., m. Emma **Reynolds.**
Harry B.
Katherine V.
Marvin D.

Robinson, 125.
Ann, m. Jobe **Brooks.**
Isabella, m. Mr. **Wyatt.**
Jane, m. Arch **Calhoun.**
Lucius.
Luke.
Martha Arabella, m. Travis **McClendon.**
Mary Elizabeth, m. James F. **Parker.**
Samuel.
William.

Sapp, 128.
Dorothy Cecelia.
Ethel Martia, m. Wm. B. **Farrar.**
Eugenia.
Wm. Martin Jr., m. Doris **Richard.**

Schierer, 75.
Crystal, m. LeRoy **Johnson.**
Dean, m. Madge **McMullen.**
Ethel, m. Ed. **Holmes.**
Ned.
Niles.
Paul.
Shirley Pearl.

Schnack, 118.
Charles.
Mary.

Searls, 90.
Bell, W.
Erma Aleen.
Kenneth Brice.
Lee Hill, m. Rachel **McLisken.**
Louise Lovina, m. Emil **Suter.**
Max Loveless.
Mildred Ione, m. Joseph Arnold **Bingham.**
Nina May, m. Arthur Ellis **Westover.**
Rex Delos.
Zenola Fay, m. Franz **Suter.**

Slay, 129.
James Alpheus.
Jane.
William Benjamin.

Snow, 128.
Charles Henry, m. Longenia **Wright Scott.**
Ella A., m. Charles B. **Snow.**

Emily, m. James **Dasher.**
Jennie.
May Elizabeth, m. Daniel **Sullivan.**

Spainhower, 81.
Orrin Willard Jr.
Rebecca Ann.

Sparks, 149.
Dolus, m. Winnie **Lewis.**
Roy.
Cecil.

Stapier, 122.
Eliza.
John.
Louisa.
Martha Lovelace, m. Wm. **Dozier.**
William James.

Tilson, 77-78.
Edith Mae, m. Jack **Ludlow.**
Eva Elizabeth, m. (1) Wm. Edison **McBeth** (2) Hyrum Burtram **Phelps.**
Evelyn Virginia, m. Lawrence **Davis.**
George Abbot.
George Kermit.
Grace Lucile, m. Raymond Joseph **Monsen.**
James Raymond.
Juliette, m. Frank **McBeth.**
Leo Sommer, m. Jennie **MacMiles.**
Madaline.
Mary Janice.
Mary Maretta.
Millie Ann, m. Leonard **Searles.**
Raymond Miles, m. Eleanor **Hamilton.**
Reba.
Sherman Lee, m. Marcia **Patten.**
Theron Perry.

Updike, 175.
Barziliah, m. Amelia **Yates.**
Emeline, m. W. J. **Little.**
Cornelius S., m. Elizabeth **Mattice.**
William C., m. Ella **Mason.**
Catherine, m. Bela **McDonald.**
Mary Jane, m. Frank B. **Cruser.**
Sarah A., m. Geo. F. **Boulton.**
Carrie M. m. Julius P. **North.**
Harriet D., m. Peter **Rose.**

Weeks, 162.
Mary Loveless.
Harold Morgan.

Wilson, 68.
Clarence Le Roy.
David, Jr.
Effie May.
Elmira.
George Whitford.
Guy.
Hyrum, m. Lydia **Harper.**
James, E. L.
John Carlton.
Mahala E.
Mary Jane, m. John **Done.**
Rose, m. Frank **Finnlayson.**

Wombwell, 26.
Thomas, m. Margaretta **Hatton.**

Yancey, 147.
Wm. Lowndes Jr., m. Annie **Stroude.**